This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Henry Oglander.

335 (2)

The
Gordon Lester Ford
Collection
Presented by his Sons
Worthington Chauncey Ford
and
Paul Leicester Ford
to the
New York Public Library

THE

WORKS

OF

Dr. Jonathan Swift,

Dean of St. Patrick's, Dublin.

VOLUME II.

LONDON,
Printed for C. BATHURST, in Fleet-Street.

MDCCLXVIII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
156909
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1899.

TRAVELS

INTO

Several remote Nations of the World;

By LEMUEL GULLIVER,

First a Surgeon, and then a Captain of ſeveral Ships.

In FOUR PARTS.

PART I.

A Voyage to LILLIPUT.

PART II.

A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.

PART III.

A Voyage to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

PART IV.

A Voyage to the Country of the HOUYHNHNMS.

LONDON,
Printed for C. BATHURST.
MDCCLXVIII.

THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

THE author of theſe travels, Mr. *Lemuel Gulliver*, is my antient and intimate friend; there is likewiſe ſome relation between us on the mother's ſide. About three years ago Mr. *Gulliver*, growing weary of the concourſe of curious people coming to him at his houſe in *Redriff*, made a ſmall purchaſe of land with a convenient houſe near *Newark* in *Nottinghamſhire*, his native country; where he now lives retired, yet in good eſteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr. *Gulliver* was born in *Nottinghamſhire*, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him ſay, his family came from *Oxfordſhire*; to confirm which, I have obſerved in the church-yard at *Banbury* in that county ſeveral tombs and monuments of the *Gullivers*.

Before he quitted *Redriff*, he left the cuſtody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to diſpoſe of them as I ſhould think fit. I have carefully peruſed them three times: The ſtyle is very plain and ſimple; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumſtantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole; and indeed the author was ſo diſtinguiſhed for his veracity, that it became a ſort of a proverb among his neighbours at *Redriff*,

when any one affirmed a thing, to ſay it was as true as if Mr. *Gulliver* had ſpoken it.

By the advice of ſeveral worthy perſons, to whom with the author's permiſſion I communicated theſe papers, I now venture to ſend them into the world, hoping they may be, at leaſt for ſome time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common ſcribbles of politicks and party.

This volume would have been at leaſt twice as large, if I had not made bold to ſtrike out innumerable paſſages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the ſeveral voyages, together with the minute deſcriptions of the management of the ſhip in ſtorms in the ſtyle of ſailors; likewiſe the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reaſon to apprehend, that Mr. *Gulliver* may be a little diſſatisfied: But I was reſolved to fit the work as much as poſſible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in ſea affairs ſhall have led me to commit ſome miſtakes, I alone am anſwerable for them: And if any traveller hath a curioſity to ſee the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive ſatisfaction from the firſt pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

A LETTER FROM Captain *Gulliver* to his Couſin *Sympſon*.

Written in the Year 1727.

I HOPE you will be ready to own publickly, whenever you ſhall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publiſh a very looſe and uncorrect account of my travels, with direction to hire ſome young gentleman of either univerſity to put them in order, and correct the ſtyle, as my couſin *Dampier* did by my advice in his book called, *A Voyage round the World*. But I do not remember I gave you power to conſent, that any thing ſhould be omitted, and much leſs that any thing ſhould be inſerted: therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind; particularly a paragraph about her majeſty queen *Anne* of moſt pious and glorious memory; although I did reverence and eſteem her more than any of human ſpecies. But you, or your interpolator, ought to have conſidered, that as it was not my inclination, ſo was it not decent to praiſe any animal of our compoſition before my maſter *Houyhnhnm*: And beſides, the fact was altogether falſe; for to my knowledge, being in *England* during ſome part of her majeſty's reign, ſhe did govern by a chief miniſter; nay even by two ſucceſſively, the firſt whereof was the lord of *Godolphin*, and the ſecond the lord of *Oxford*; ſo that you have made me *ſay the thing that was not*. Likewiſe in the ac-

count of the academy of projectors, and ſeveral paſſages of my diſcourſe to my maſter *Houyhnhnm*, you have either omitted ſome material circumſtances, or minced or changed them in ſuch a manner, that I do hardly know mine own work When I formerly hinted to you ſomething of this in a letter, you were pleaſed to anſwer, that you were afraid of giving offence; that people in power were very watchful over the preſs, and apt not only to interpret, but to puniſh every thing which looked like an *Inuendo* (as I think you call it.) But, pray how could that which I ſpoke ſo many years ago, and at above five thouſand leagues diſtance, in another reign, be applied to any of the *Yahoos*, who now are ſaid to govern the herd; eſpecially at a time when I little thought on, or feared, the unhappineſs of living under them? have not I the moſt reaſon to complain, when I ſee theſe very *Yahoos* carried by *Houyhnhnms* in a vehicle, as if theſe were brutes and thoſe the rational creatures? And indeed to avoid ſo monſtrous and deteſtable a ſight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourſelf, and to the truſt I repoſed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgment in being prevailed upon by the intreaties and falſe reaſonings of you and ſome others, very much againſt my own opinion, to ſuffer my travels to be publiſhed. Pray bring to your mind how often I deſired you to conſider, when you inſiſted on the motive of *Public Good*, that the *Yahoos* were a ſpecies of animals utterly incapable

pable of amendment by precepts or example: And ſo it hath proved; for, inſtead of ſeeing a full ſtop put to all abuſes and corruptions, at leaſt in this little iſland, as I had reaſon to expect; behold, after above ſix months warning, I cannot learn that my book has produced one ſingle effect according to mine intentions. I deſired, you would let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguiſhed; judges learned and upright; pleaders honeſt and modeſt with ſome tincture of common ſenſe, and *Smithfield* blazing with pyramids of law-books; the young nobility's education entirely changed; the phyſicians baniſhed; the female *Yahoos* abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good ſenſe; courts and levees of great miniſters thoroughly weeded and ſwept; wit, merit, and learning rewarded; all diſgracers of the preſs in proſe and verſe condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirſt with their own ink. Theſe, and a thouſand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it muſt be owned, that ſeven months were a ſufficient time to correct every vice and folly to which *Yahoos* are ſubject, if their natures had been capable of the leaſt diſpoſition to virtue or wiſdom: Yet, ſo far have you been from anſwering mine expectation in any of your letters; that on the contrary you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and ſecond parts; wherein I ſee myſelf accuſed of reflecting upon great ſtates-folk; of degrading human nature (for ſo they have ſtill the con-

confidence to ſtile it) and of abuſing the female ſex. I find likewiſe, that the writers of thoſe bundles are not agreed among themſelves; for ſome of them will not allow me to be the author of mine own travels; and others make me author of books, to which I am wholly a ſtranger.

I find likewiſe, that your printer hath been ſo careleſs as to confound the times, and miſtake the dates of my ſeveral voyages and returns; neither aſſigning the true year, nor the true month, nor day of the month: And I hear the original manuſcript is all deſtroyed ſince the publication of my book; neither have I any copy left; however, I have ſent you ſome corrections, which you may inſert, if ever there ſhould be a ſecond edition: And yet I cannot ſtand to them; but ſhall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers to adjuſt it as they pleaſe.

I hear ſome of our ſea-*Yahoos* find fault with my ſea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in uſe. I cannot help it. In my firſt voyages, while I was young, I was inſtructed by the oldeſt mariners, and learned to ſpeak as they did. But I have ſince found that the ſea-*Yahoos* are apt, like the land ones, to become newfangled in their words, which the latter change every year; inſomuch, as I remember upon each return to mine own country, their old dialect was ſo altered, that I could hardly underſtand the new. And I obſerve, when any *Yahoo* comes from *London* out of curioſity to viſit me at mine own houſe, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If

If the cenſure of the *Yahoos* could any way affect me, I ſhould have great reaſon to complain, that ſome of them are ſo bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of mine own brain; and have gone ſo far as to drop hints, that the *Houyhnhnms* and *Yahoos* have no more exiſtence than the inhabitants of *Utopia*.

Indeed I muſt confeſs, that as to the people of *Lilliput*, *Brobdingrag* (for ſo the word ſhould have been ſpelt, and not erroneouſly *Brobdingnag*) and *Laputa*, I have never yet heard of any *Yahoo* ſo preſumptuous as to diſpute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them; becauſe the truth immediately ſtrikes every reader with conviction. And is there leſs probability in my account of the *Houyhnhnms* or *Yahoos*, when it is manifeſt as to the latter, there are ſo many thouſands, even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in *Houyhnhnm-land*, becauſe they uſe a ſort of *Jabber*, and do not go naked? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praiſe of the whole race would be of leſs conſequence to me, than the neighing of thoſe two degenerate *Houyhnhnms* I keep in my ſtable; becauſe from theſe, degenerate as they are, I ſtill improve in ſome virtues without any mixture of vice.

Do theſe miſerable animals preſume to think, that I am ſo degenerated as to defend my veracity? *Yahoo* as I am, it is well known through all *Houyhnhnm-land*, that, by the inſtructions and example of my illuſtrious maſter, I was able in the compaſs of two years (although I confeſs with the utmoſt difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, ſhuffling,

ſling, deceiving, and equivocating, ſo deeply rooted in the very ſouls of all my ſpecies; eſpecially the *Europeans*.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occaſion; but I forbear troubling myſelf or you any further. I muſt freely confeſs, that ſince my laſt return ſome corruptions of my *Yahoo* nature have revived in me by converſing with a few of your ſpecies, and particularly thoſe of mine own family, by an unavoidable neceſſity; elſe I ſhould never have attempted ſo abſurd a project as that of reforming the *Yahoo* race in this kingdom: But I have now done with all ſuch viſionary ſchemes for ever.

April 2, 1727.

*** That the original copy of theſe travels was altered by the perſon, through whoſe hands it was conveyed to the preſs, is a fact; but the paſſages, of which Mr. *Gulliver* complains in this letter, are to be found only in the firſt editions; for the Dean having reſtored the text wherever it had been altered ſent the copy to the late Mr. *Motte* by the hands of Mr. *Charles Ford*. This copy has been exactly followed in every ſubſequent edition, except that printed in *Ireland*, by *George Faulkner*; the editor of which, ſuppoſing the Dean to be ſerious when he mentioned the corruptions of dates, and yet finding them unaltered, thought fit to alter them himſelf; there is however ſcarce one of theſe alterations, in which he has not committed a blunder: Though while he was thus buſy in defacing the parts that were perfect, he ſuffered the accidental blemiſhes of others to remain: See the preface to this edition.

CON-

CONTENTS.

PART I.

A Voyage to LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

THE author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life; gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput; *is made a prisoner, and carried up the country.* page 1.

CHAP. II.

The emperor of Lilliput, *attended by several of the nobility, comes to see the author in his confinement. The emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him.* p. 16.

CHAP. III.

The author diverts the emperor and his nobility of both sexes in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput *described. The author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.* p. 31.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, *the metropolis of* Lilliput, *deſcribed, together with the emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the emperor in his wars.* page 42.

CHAP. V.

The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the emperor of Bleſuſcu, *and ſue for peace. The empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident; the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace.* p. 50.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; *their learning, laws, and cuſtoms, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.* p. 59.

CHAP. VII.

The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high-treaſon, maketh his eſcape to Bleſuſcu. *His reception there.* p. 74.

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Bleſuſcu; *and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.* p. 86.

PART

PART II.

A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great ſtorm deſcribed, the long-boat ſent to fetch water, the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants. page 95.

CHAP. II.

A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey. p. 113.

CHAP. III.

The author ſent for to court. The queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the king. He diſputes with his majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the queen's dwarf. p. 122.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The king's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed. page 137.

CHAP. V.

Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation. p. 144.

CHAP. VI.

Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the king and queen. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The king enquires into the ſtate of England, *which the author relates to him. The king's obſervations thereon.* p. 158.

CHAP. VII.

The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the king, which is rejected. The king's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate. p. 171.

CHAP. VIII.

The king and queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England. p. 181.

PART

PART III.

A Voyage to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pyrates. The malice of a Dutchman. *His arrival at an iſland. He is received into* Laputa. page 199.

CHAP. II.

The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the king, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women.* p. 207.

CHAP. III.

A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great improvements in the latter. The king's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections.* p. 219.

CHAP. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great*

a great lord. His converſation with that lord. page 227.

CHAP. V.

The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. *The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves.* p. 236.

CHAP. VI.

A further account of the academy. The author propoſes ſome improvements, which are honourably received. p. 247.

CHAP. VII.

The author leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No ſhip ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to* Glubbdubdrib. *His reception by the governor.* p. 255.

CHAP. VIII.

A further account of Glubbdubdrib. *Ancient and modern hiſtory corrected.* p. 262.

CHAP. IX.

The author's return to Maldonada. *Sails to the kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The author confined. He is ſent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The king's great lenity to his ſubjects.* p. 270.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnaggians *commended. A particular deſcription of the* Struldbrugs, *with many converſations between the author and ſome eminent perſons upon that ſubject.* page 276.

CHAP. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England. p. 289.

PART IV.

A Voyage to the country of the Houyhnhnms.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin, ſet him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms. p. 297.

CHAP. II.

The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt*

relieved. His manner of feeding in this country. page 305.

CHAP. III.

The author ſtudious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality came out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage.* p. 314.

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *notion of truth and falſhood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage.* p. 322.

CHAP. V.

The author, at his maſter's command, informs him of the ſtate of England. *The cauſes of war among the princes of* Europe. *The author begins to explain the* Engliſh *conſtitution.* p. 330.

CHAP. VI.

A continuation of the ſtate of England. *The character of a firſt or chief miniſter of ſtate in* european *courts.* p. 340.

CHAP. VII.

The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and

and adminiſtration of England, *as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature.* page 350.

CHAP. VIII.

The author relates ſeveral particulars of the yahoos. *The great virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly.* p. 361.

CHAP. IX.

A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.* p. 370.

CHAP. X.

The author's oeconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. *His great improvement in virtue by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives, and finiſhes a canoo, by the help of a fellow-ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture.* p. 378.

CHAP. XI.

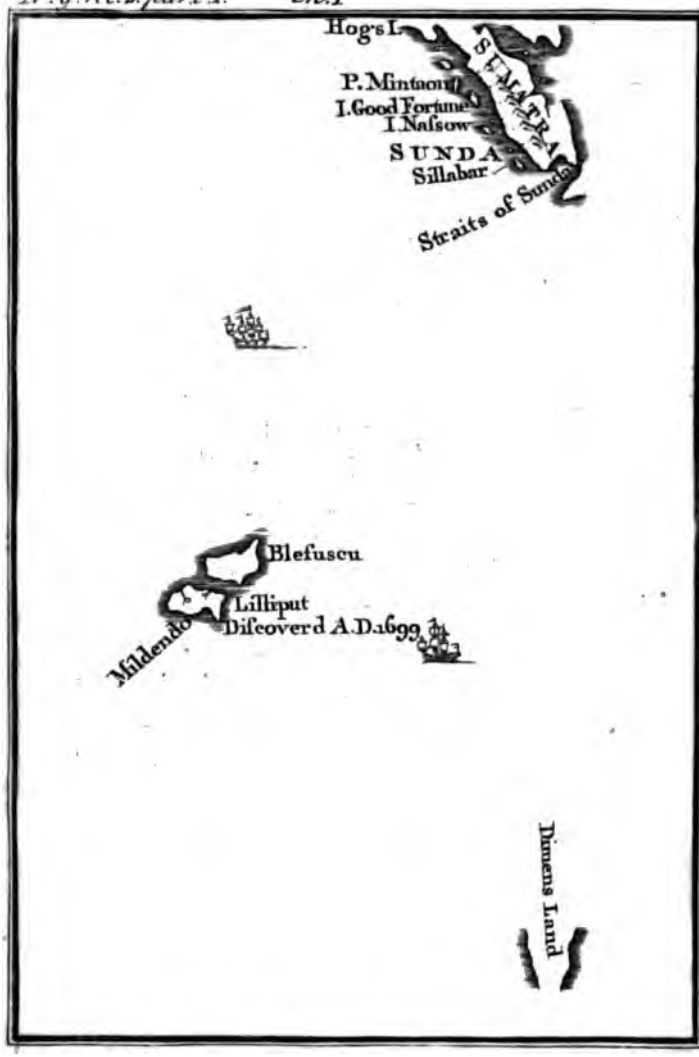
The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, *hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded*

wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized and carried by force into a portugueze *ſhip. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at* England. page 389.

CHAP. XII.

The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection anſwered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his laſt leave of the reader; propoſeth his manner of living for the future; gives good advice and concludeth. p. 401.

A VOYAGE


Hog's I.
P. Mintaou
I. Good Fortune
I. Nalsow
SUNDA
Sillabar
SUMATRA
Straits of Sunda
Blefuscu
Lilliput
Mildendo
Discoverd A.D.1699
Dimens Land

A

VOYAGE

TO

LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

The author gives ſome account of himſelf and family: his firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput; *is made a priſoner, and carried up the country.*

MY father had a ſmall eſtate in *Nottinghamſhire*; I was the third of five ſons. He ſent me to *Emanuel* college in *Cambridge* at fourteen years old, where I reſided three years, and applied myſelf cloſe to my ſtudies; but the charge of maintaining me, although I had a very ſcanty allowance, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. *James Bates*, an eminent ſurgeon in *London*, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then ſending me ſmall ſums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematicks uſeful to thoſe, who intend to travel, as I always be-

Theſe voyages are intended as a moral political romance — to correct vice by ſhewing its deformity in oppoſition to the beauty of virtue, and to amend the falſe ſyſtems of philoſophy by pointing out the errors, and applying ſalutary means to avoid them. ORRERY.

lieved it would be ſome time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr. *Bates*, I went down to my father; where, by the aſſiſtance of him and my uncle *John*, and ſome other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promiſe of thirty pounds a year to maintain me at *Leyden*: there I ſtudied phyſick two years and ſeven months, knowing it would be uſeful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from *Leyden*, I was recommended by my good maſter Mr. *Bates* to be ſurgeon to the *Swallow*, captain *Abraham Pannell*, commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the *Levant*, and ſome other parts. When I came back, I reſolved to ſettle in *London*, to which Mr. *Bates*, my maſter, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to ſeveral patients. I took part of a ſmall houſe in the *Old-Jury*; and being adviſed to alter my condition, I married Mrs. *Mary Burton*, ſecond daughter to Mr. *Edmund Burton* hoſier in *Newgate-ſtreet*, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But, my good maſter *Bates* dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my buſineſs began to fail; for my conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore conſulted with my wife, and ſome of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to ſea. I was ſurgeon ſucceſſively in two ſhips, and made ſeveral voyages for ſix years to the *Eaſt* and *Weſt Indies*, by which I got ſome addition to my fortune.

fortune. My hours of leiſure I ſpent in reading the beſt authors, antient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and when I was aſhore, in obſerving the manners and diſpoſitions of the people, as well as learning their language, wherein I had a great facility by the ſtrength of my memory.

The laſt of theſe voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the ſea, and intended to ſtay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the *Old-Jury* to *Fetter-lane*, and from thence to *Wapping*, hoping to get buſineſs among the ſailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from captain *William Prichard*, maſter of the *Antelope*, who was making a voyage to the *South-Sea*. We ſet ſail from *Briſtol*, *May* 4th, 1699, and our voyage at firſt was very proſperous.

It would not be proper, for ſome reaſons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in thoſe ſeas: let it ſuffice to inform him, that, in our paſſage from thence to the *Eaſt-Indies*, we were driven by a violent ſtorm to the north-weſt of *Van Diemen's land*. By an obſervation we found ourſelves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes ſouth. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the reſt were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of *November*, which was the beginning of ſummer in thoſe parts, the weather being very hazy, the ſea-

men ſpied a rock within half a cable's length of the ſhip; but the wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the ſea, made a ſhift to get clear of the ſhip and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with labour while we were in the ſhip. We therefore truſted ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overſet by a ſudden ſtorm from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the rock, or were left in the veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own part, I ſwam as fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: but when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found myſelf within my depth; and by this time the ſtorm was much abated. The declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a mile before I got to the ſhore, which I conjectured was about eight a clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not diſcover any ſign of houſes or inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ſhip, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down

on

on the graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were ſtrongly faſtened on each ſide to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the ſame manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral ſlender ligatures acroſs my body, from my armpits to my thighs. I could only look upwards, the ſun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confuſed noiſe about me; but, in the poſture I lay, could ſee nothing except the ſky. In a little time I felt ſomething alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breaſt came almoſt up to my chin; when bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not ſix inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſame kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my ſides upon the ground. However, they ſoon returned, and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full ſight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried

out in a ſhrill but diſtinct voice, *hekinah degul:* the others repeated the ſame words ſeveral times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneaſineſs; at length, ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the fortune to break the ſtrings, and wrench out the pegs, that faſtened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I diſcovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſame time with a violent pull, which gave me exceſſive pain, I a little looſened the ſtrings that tied down my hair on the left ſide, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a ſecond time, before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great ſhout in a very ſhrill accent, and after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *tolgo phonac*; when in an inſtant I felt above an hundred arrows diſcharged on my left hand, which pricked me like ſo many needles; and beſides, they ſhot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in *Europe*, whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my body, (though I felt them not) and ſome on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this ſhower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſcharged another volley larger than the firſt, and ſome of them attempted with ſpears to ſtick me in the ſides; but by good luck I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the moſt prudent method

method to lie ſtill, and my deſign was to continue ſo till night, when, my left hand being already looſe, I could eaſily free myſelf: and as for the inhabitants, I had reaſon to believe I might be a match for the greateſt army they could bring againſt me, if they were all of the ſame ſize with him, that I ſaw. But fortune diſpoſed otherwiſe of me. When the people obſerved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more arrows: but, by the noiſe I heard, I knew their numbers increaſed; and about four yards from me, over-againſt my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and ſtrings would permit me, I ſaw a ſtage erected about a foot and half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a perſon of quality, made me a a long ſpeech, whereof I underſtood not one ſyllable. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the principal perſon began his oration, he cried out three times, *langro dehul ſan*; (theſe words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the ſtrings that faſtened the left ſide of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the perſon and geſture of him that was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him,

whereof one was a page that held up his train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two ſtood one on each ſide to ſupport him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could obſerve many periods of threatnings, and others of promiſes, pity, and kindneſs. I anſwered in a few words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the ſun, as calling him for a witneſs; and being almoſt famiſhed with hunger, having not eaten a morſel for ſome hours before I left the ſhip, I found the demands of nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to ſignify that I wanted food. The *burgo* (for ſo they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the ſtage, and commanded that ſeveral ladders ſhould be applied to my ſides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baſkets full of meat, which had been provided and ſent thither by the king's orders, upon the firſt intelligence he received of me. I obſerved there was the fleſh of ſeveral animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the taſte. There were ſhoulders, legs, and loins, ſhaped like thoſe of mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time, about the bigneſs of muſket

bullets. They ſupplied me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thouſand marks of wonder and aſtoniſhment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another ſign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating, that a ſmall quantity would not ſuffice me, and being a moſt ingenious people, they ſlung up with great dexterity one of their largeſt hogſheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and taſted like a ſmall wine of *Burgundy*, but much more delicious. They brought me a ſecond hogſhead, which I drank in the ſame manner, and made ſigns for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe wonders, they ſhouted for joy, and danced upon my breaſt, repeating ſeveral times as they did at firſt, *bekinah degul*. They made me a ſign that I ſhould throw down the two hogſheads, but firſt warning the people below to ſtand out of the way, crying aloud, *borach mevola*, and when they ſaw the veſſels in the air, there was an univerſal ſhout of *bekinah degul*. I confeſs, I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my reach, and daſh them againſt the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the promiſe of honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive behaviour, ſoon drove out theſe imaginations.

Beſides,

Beſides, I now conſidered myſelf as bound by the laws of hoſpitality to a people, who had treated me with ſo much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not ſufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of theſe diminutive mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very ſight of ſo prodigious a creature, as I muſt appear to them. After ſome time, when they obſerved that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a perſon of high rank from his imperial majeſty. His excellency, having mounted on the ſmall of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the ſignet royal, which he applied cloſe to my eyes, ſpoke about ten minutes without any ſigns of anger, but with a kind of determinate reſolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile diſtant, whither it was agreed by his majeſty in council, that I muſt be conveyed. I anſwered in few words, but to no purpoſe, and made a ſign with my hand that was looſe, putting it to the other (but over his excellency's head for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to ſignify that I deſired my liberty. It appeared, that he underſtood me well enough, for he ſhook his head by way of diſapprobation, and held his hand in a poſture to ſhew, that I muſt

be

be carried as a priſoner. However, he made other ſigns to let me underſtand, that I ſhould have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds, but again, when I felt the ſmart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in bliſters, and many of the darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerving likewiſe that the number of my enemies increaſed, I gave tokens to let them know, that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this the *burgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and chearful countenances. Soon after I heard a general ſhout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *peplom ſelan*, and I felt great numbers of people on my left ſide relaxing the cords to ſuch a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe myſelf with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great aſtoniſhment of the people, who conjecturing, by my motion, what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that ſide, to avoid the torrent which fell with ſuch noiſe and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a ſort of ointment very pleaſant to the ſmell, which in a few minutes removed all the ſmart of their arrows. Theſe circumſtances, added to the refreſhment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept about eight hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no wonder,

wonder, for the phyſicians, by the emperor's order, had mingled a ſleepy potion in the hogſheads of wine.

It ſeems that, upon the firſt moment I was diſcovered ſleeping on the ground after my landing, the emperor had early notice of it by an expreſs; and determined in council, that I ſhould be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I ſlept) that plenty of meat and drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This reſolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in *Europe* on the like occaſion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous: for ſuppoſing theſe people had endeavoured to kill me with their ſpears and arrows while I was aſleep, I ſhould certainly have awaked with the firſt ſenſe of ſmart, which might ſo far have rouzed my rage and ſtrength, as to have enabled me to break the ſtrings, wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make reſiſtance, ſo they could expect no mercy.

Theſe people are moſt excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanicks by the countenance and encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince hath ſeveral machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largeſt men of war, whereof ſome are nine

feet

feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on theſe engines three or four hundred yards to the ſea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately ſet at work to prepare the greateſt engine they had. It was a frame of wood raiſed three inches from the ground, about ſeven feet long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The ſhout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it ſeems ſet out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raiſe and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpoſe, and very ſtrong cords of the bigneſs of packthread were faſtened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt men were employed to draw up theſe cords by many pullies faſtened on the poles, and thus, in leſs than three hours, I was raiſed and ſlung into the engine, and there tied faſt. All this I was told, for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound ſleep by the force of that ſoporiferous medicine infuſed into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor's largeſt horſes, each about four inches and an half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I ſaid, was half a mile diſtant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage

riage being ſtopt a while to adjuſt ſomething that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curioſity to ſee how I looked, when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very ſoftly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the ſharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left noſtril, which tickled my noſe like a ſtraw, and made me ſneeze violently [a]: whereupon they ſtole off unperceived, and it was three weeks, before I knew the cauſe of my awaking ſo ſuddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and reſted at night with five hundred guards on each ſide of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to ſhoot me, if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The next morning at ſun-riſe we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us, but his great officers would by no means ſuffer his majeſty to endanger his perſon by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage ſtopt, there ſtood an ancient temple, eſteemed to be the

[a] It has been remarked, that courage in whatever cauſe, though it ſometimes excites indignation, is never the object of contempt; but this appears to be true, only becauſe courage is ſuppoſed to imply ſuperiority: for this *officer in the guards* becomes extremely ridiculous and contemptible by an act of the moſt daring curioſity, which ſets him in compariſon with *Gulliver*; to whom he was ſo much inferior, that a blaſt of the *man-mountain*'s noſtrils would have endangered his life; and if heroiſm itſelf is not proof againſt ridicule, thoſe ſurely are *Lilliputians* in philoſophy, who conſider ridicule as the teſt of truth.

largeſt

No. 10 Vol. 2 p. 21.

J. J. Müller inv. del. et Sc.

largeſt in the whole kingdom, which having been polluted ſome years before by an unnatural murder, was according to the zeal of thoſe people looked upon as prophane, and therefore had been applied to common uſe, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I ſhould lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almoſt two feet wide, through which I could eaſily creep. On each ſide of the gate was a ſmall window, not above ſix inches from the ground: into that on the left ſide the king's ſmith conveyed fourſcore and eleven chains, like thoſe that hang to a lady's watch in *Europe*, and almoſt as large, which were locked to my left leg with ſix and thirty padlocks. Over-againſt this temple, on the other ſide of the great highway, at twenty feet diſtance, there was a turret at leaſt five feet high. Here the emperor aſcended with many principal lords of his court to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee them. It was reckoned, that above an hundred thouſand inhabitants came out of the town upon the ſame errand; and in ſpite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fewer than ten thouſand at ſeveral times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was ſoon iſſued to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſe, they cut all the ſtrings that bound me; whereupon I roſe up with as melancholy a diſpoſition, as ever I had

had in my life. But the noiſe and aſtoniſhment of the people at ſeeing me riſe and walk are not to be expreſſed. The chains, that held my left leg, were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a ſemicircle; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAP. II.

The emperor of Lilliput, *attended by ſeveral of the nobility, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The emperor's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are ſearched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him.*

WHEN I found myſelf on my feet, I looked about me, and muſt confeſs I never beheld a more entertaining proſpect. The country around appeared like a continued garden, and the incloſed fields, which were generally forty feet ſquare, reſembled ſo many beds of flowers. Theſe fields were intermingled with woods of half a ſtang*, and the talleſt trees, as I could judge, appeared to be ſeven feet high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted ſcene of a city in a theatre.

* A *ſtang* is a pole or perch; ſixteen feet and a half.

I had been for ſome hours extremely preſſed by the neceſſities of nature; which was no wonder, it being almoſt two days, ſince I had laſt diſburthened myſelf. I was under great difficulties between urgency and ſhame. The beſt expedient I could think on, was to creep into my houſe, which I accordingly did; and ſhutting the gate after me, I went as far as the length of my chain would ſuffer, and diſcharged my body of that uneaſy load. But this was the only time I was ever guilty of ſo uncleanly an action; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader will give ſome allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially conſidered my caſe, and the diſtreſs I was in. From this time my conſtant practice was, as ſoon as I roſe, to perform that buſineſs in open air at the full extent of my chain; and due care was taken every morning before company came, that the offenſive matter ſhould be carried off in wheelbarrows by two ſervants appointed for that purpoſe. I would not have dwelt ſo long upon a circumſtance, that perhaps at firſt ſight may appear not very momentous, if I had not thought it neceſſary to juſtify my character in point of cleanlineſs to the world; which I am told ſome of my maligners have been pleaſed, upon this and other occaſions, to call in queſtion.

When this adventure was at an end, I came back out of my houſe, having occaſion for freſh air. The emperor was already deſcended from the tower, and advancing on horſe-

back towards me, which had like to have coſt him dear; for the beaſt, though very well trained, yet wholly unuſed to ſuch a ſight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet: but that prince, who is an excellent horſeman, kept his ſeat, till his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while his majeſty had time to diſmount. When he alighted, he ſurveyed me round with great admiration; but kept beyond the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they puſhed forward in a ſort of vehicles upon wheels, till I could reach them. I took theſe vehicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls; and I emptied the liquor of ten veſſels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and ſo I did with the reſt. The empreſs, and young princes of the blood of both ſexes, attended by many ladies, ſat at ſome diſtance in their chairs; but upon the accident that happened to the emperor's horſe, they alighted, and came near his perſon, which I am now going to deſcribe. He is taller by almoſt the breadth of my hail, than any of his court, which alone is enough to ſtrike an awe into the beholders. His features are ſtrong and maſculine, with an *Auſtrian* lip and arched noſe, his complexion olive, his countenance erect,

creſt, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majeſtic. He was then paſt his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about ſeven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my ſide, ſo that my face was parallel to his, and he ſtood but three yards off: however, I have had him ſince many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the deſcription. His dreſs was very plain and ſimple, and the faſhion of it between the *aſiatick* and the *european:* but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the creſt. He held his ſword drawn in his hand to defend himſelf, if I ſhould happen to break looſe*; it was almoſt three inches long; the hilt and ſcabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was ſhrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could diſtinctly hear it, when I ſtood up. The ladies and courtiers were all moſt magnificently clad, ſo that the ſpot they ſtood upon ſeemed to reſemble a petticoat ſpread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and ſilver. His imperial majeſty ſpoke often to me, and I returned anſwers; but nei-

* The maſculine ſtrength of features, which *Gulliver* could not ſee, till he laid his face upon the ground; and the awful ſuperiority of ſtature in a being, whom he held in his hand; the helmet, the plume, and the ſword, are a fine reproof of human pride; the objects of which are trifling diſtinctions whether of perſon or rank; the ridiculous parade and oſtentation of a pigmy; which derive not only their origin but their uſe from the folly, weakneſs, and imperfection of ourſelves and others.

ther of us could underſtand a ſyllable. There were ſeveral of his prieſts and lawyers preſent, (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to addreſs themſelves to me, and I ſpoke to them in as many languages as I had the leaſt ſmattering of, which were *high* and *low dutch*, *latin*, *french*, *ſpaniſh*, *italian*, and *lingua franca*; but all to no purpoſe. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a ſtrong guard to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to croud about me as near as they durſt, and ſome of them had the impudence to ſhoot their arrows at me, as I ſat on the ground by the door of my houſe, whereof one very narrowly miſſed my left eye. But the colonel ordered ſix of the ring-leaders to be ſeized, and thought no puniſhment ſo proper as to deliver them bound into my hands; which ſome of his ſoldiers accordingly did, puſhing them forwards with the but-ends of their pikes into my reach: I took them all in my right hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket, and as to the ſixth, I made a countenance, as if I would eat him alive. The poor man ſqualled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain; eſpecially when they ſaw me take out my penknife: but I ſoon put them out of fear; for, looking mildly and immediately cutting the ſtrings he was bound with, I ſet him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the reſt in the ſame manner, taking them one by one out of my

my pocket; and I obſerved both the ſoldiers and people were highly delighted at this mark of my clemency, which was repreſented very much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with ſome difficulty into my houſe, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do ſo about a fortnight; during which time the emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred beds [a] of the common meaſure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my houſe; an hundred and fifty of their beds, ſewn together, made up the breadth and length; and theſe were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardneſs of the floor, that was of ſmooth ſtone. By the ſame computation they provided me with ſheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one, who had been ſo long inured to hardſhips.

As the news of my arrival ſpread through the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to ſee me; ſo that the villages were almoſt emptied; and great neglect of tillage and houſhold affairs muſt have enſued, if his imperial majeſty had not provided by ſeveral proclamations and orders of ſtate againſt this inconveniency. He directed, that thoſe, who had already beheld me, ſhould return home, and not preſume to come within fifty yards of my houſe

[a] *Gulliver* has obſerved great exactneſs in the juſt proportion and appearances of the objects thus leſſened. ORRERY.

without licence from court; whereby the ſecretaries of ſtate got conſiderable fees.

In the mean time the emperor held frequent councils to debate, what courſe ſhould be taken with me; and I was afterwards aſſured by a particular friend, a perſon of great quality, who was as much in the ſecret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking looſe; that my diet would be very expenſive, and might cauſe a famine. Sometimes they determined to ſtarve me, or at leaſt to ſhoot me in the face and hands with poiſoned arrows, which would ſoon diſpatch me; but again they conſidered, that the ſtench of ſo large a carcaſe might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably ſpread through the whole kingdom. In the midſt of theſe conſultations ſeveral officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber, and two of them being admitted gave an account of my behaviour to the ſix criminals above-mentioned, which made ſo favourable an impreſſion in the breaſt of his majeſty, and the whole board, in my behalf, that an imperial commiſſion was iſſued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city to deliver in every morning ſix beeves, forty ſheep, and other victuals for my ſuſtenance; together with a proportionable quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors; for the due payment of which his majeſty gave aſſignments upon his treaſury. For this prince lives chiefly upon

his own demeſnes, ſeldom, except upon great occaſions, raiſing any ſubſidies upon his ſubjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their own expence. An eſtabliſhment was alſo made of ſix hundred perſons to be my domeſticks, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each ſide of my door. It was likewiſe ordered, that three hundred taylors ſhould make me a ſuit of cloaths after the faſhion of the country: that ſix of his majeſty's greateſt ſcholars ſhould be employed to inſtruct me in their language: and laſtly, that the emperor's horſes, and thoſe of the nobility, and troops of guards, ſhould be frequently exerciſed in my ſight to accuſtom themſelves to me. All theſe orders were duly put in execution, and in about three weeks I made a great progreſs in learning their language; during which time the emperor frequently honoured me with his viſits, and was pleaſed to aſſiſt my maſters in teaching me. We began already to converſe together in ſome ſort; and the firſt words I learnt were to expreſs my deſire, that he would pleaſe to give me my liberty, which I every day repeated on my knees. His anſwer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this muſt be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council, and that firſt I muſt *lumos kelmin peſſo deſmar lon empoſo*; that is, ſwear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, that I ſhould be uſed with all kindneſs; and he adviſed

viſed me to acquire, by my patience and diſcreet behaviour, the good opinion of himſelf and his ſubjects. He deſired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to ſearch me; for probably I might carry about me ſeveral weapons, which muſt needs be dangerous things, if they anſwered the bulk of ſo prodigious a perſon. I ſaid, his majeſty ſhould be ſatisfied; for I was ready to ſtrip myſelf, and turn up my pockets before him. This I delivered part in words, and part in ſigns. He replied, that by the laws of the kingdom I muſt be ſearched by two of his officers; that he knew this could not be done without my conſent and aſſiſtance; that he had ſo good an opinion of my generoſity and juſtice, as to truſt their perſons in my hands: that whatever they took from me, ſhould be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate, which I would ſet upon them. I took up the two officers in my hands, put them firſt into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another ſecret pocket, which I had no mind ſhould be ſearched, wherein I had ſome little neceſſaries, that were of no conſequence to any but myſelf. In one of my fobs there was a ſilver watch, and in the other a ſmall quantity of gold in a purſe. Theſe gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of every thing they ſaw; and, when they had done, deſired I would let them down, that they might deliver it to the

the emperor. This inventory I afterwards tranſlated into *engliſh*, and is word for word as follows.

Imprimis, In the right coat-pocket of the *great man-mountain* (for ſo I interpret the words *quinbus fleſtrin*) after the ſtricteſt ſearch we found only one great piece of coarſe cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your majeſty's chief room of ſtate. In the left pocket we ſaw a huge ſilver cheſt, with a cover of the ſame metal, which we the ſearchers were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened, and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid leg in a ſort of duſt, ſome part whereof flying up to our faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral times together. In his right waiſtcoat-pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white thin ſubſtances, folded one over another, about the bigneſs of three men, tied with a ſtrong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almoſt half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a ſort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, reſembling the paliſadoes before your majeſty's court; wherewith we conjecture the *man-mountain* combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with queſtions, becauſe we found it a great difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large pocket on the right ſide of his middle cover (ſo I tranſlate the word *Ranſu-la*, by which they meant my breeches) we

we ſaw a hollow pillar of iron, about
length of a man, faſtened to a ſtrong piec
timber, larger than the pillar; and upon
ſide of the pillar were huge pieces of i
ſticking out, cut into ſtrange figures, wh
we know not what to make of. In the
pocket another engine of the ſame kind.
the ſmaller pocket on the right ſide were ſe
ral round flat pieces of white and red meta
different bulk; ſome of the white, wh
ſeemed to be ſilver, were ſo large and hea
that my comrade and I could hardly lift th
In the left pocket were two black pillars i
gularly ſhaped: we could not without di
culty reach the top of them, as we ſtood
the bottom of his pocket. One of them
covered, and ſeemed all of a piece: but
the upper end of the other there appeare
white round ſubſtance, about twice the b
neſs of our heads. Within each of theſe
incloſed a prodigious plate of ſteel; whi
by our orders, we obliged him to ſhew
becauſe we apprehended they might be dan
rous engines. He took them out of th
caſes, and told us, that in his own country
practice was to ſhave his beard with one
theſe, and to cut his meat with the oth
There were two pockets, which we could
enter: theſe he called his fobs; they w
two large ſlits cut into the top of his mic
cover, but ſqueezed cloſe by the preſſure of
belly. Out of the right fob hung a great ſi
chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at
bott

bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the end of that chain; which appeared to be a globe, half ſilver, and half of ſome tranſparent metal: for on the tranſparent ſide we ſaw certain ſtrange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, till we found our fingers ſtopped by that lucid ſubſtance. He put this engine to our ears, which made an inceſſant noiſe like that of a water-mill: and we conjecture it is either ſome unknown animal, or the god that he worſhips; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, becauſe he aſſured us (if we underſtood him right, for he expreſſed himſelf very imperfectly) that he ſeldom did any thing without conſulting it. He called it his oracle, and ſaid, it pointed out the time for every action of his life [a]. From the left fob he took out a net almoſt large enough for a fiſherman, but contrived to open and ſhut like a purſe, and ſerved him for the ſame uſe: we found therein ſeveral maſſy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, muſt be of immenſe value.

Having thus, in obedience to your majeſty's commands, diligently ſearched all his pockets, we obſerved a girdle about his waiſt, made of the hide of ſome prodigious animal, from which on the left ſide hung a ſword of the length of five men; and on the right a bag or

[a] Perhaps the author intended to expoſe the probable fallacy of opinions derived from the relations of travellers by ſhewing, how little truth need to be miſunderſtood to make falſhood ſpecious.

pouch

pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your majeſty's ſubjects. In one of theſe cells were ſeveral globes, or balls, of a moſt ponderous metal, about the bigneſs of our heads, and required a ſtrong hand to lift them: the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the *man-mountain*, who uſed us with great civility, and due reſpect to your majeſty's commiſſion. Signed and ſealed, on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your majeſty's auſpicious reign.

Clefrin Frelock, Marſi Frelock.

When this inventory was read over to the emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the ſeveral particulars. He firſt called for my ſcymiter, which I took out, ſcabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt troops (who then attended him) to ſurround me at a diſtance, with their bows and arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: but I did not obſerve it, for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my ſcymiter, which, although it had got ſome ruſt by the ſea-water, was in moſt parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the troops gave a ſhout between terror and ſurprize; for the ſun ſhone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the ſcymiter

ter to and fro in my hand. His majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous prince*, was leſs daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the ſcabbard, and caſt it on the ground as gently as I could, about ſix feet from the end of my chain. The next thing he demanded, was one of the hollow iron pillars; by which he meant my pocket-piſtols. I drew it out, and at his deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the uſe of it; and charging it only with powder, which by the cloſeneſs of my pouch happened to eſcape wetting in the ſea (an inconvenience againſt which all prudent mariners take ſpecial care to provide) I firſt cautioned the emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the ſight of my ſcymiter. Hundreds fell down, as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the emperor, although he ſtood his ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome time. I delivered up both my piſtols in the ſame manner, as I had done my ſcymiter, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from fire, for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt ſpark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewiſe delivered up my watch, which the emperor was very curious to ſee, and commanded two

* He who does not find himſelf diſpoſed to honour this magnanimity, ſhould reflect, that a right to judge of moral and intellectual excellence is with great abſurdity and injuſtice arrogated by him who admires, in a being ſix feet high, any qualities that he deſpiſes in one whoſe ſtature does not exceed ſix inches.

of

of his talleſt yeomen of the guards to bear it on a pole upon their ſhoulders, as dray-men in *England* do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noiſe it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their ſight is much more acute than ours: he aſked the opinions of his learned men about it, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my ſilver and copper money, my purſe with nine large pieces of gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and ſilver ſnuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My ſcymiter, piſtols, and pouch were conveyed in carriages to his majeſty's ſtores; but the reſt of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before obſerved, one private pocket, which eſcaped their ſearch, wherein there was a pair of ſpectacles (which I ſometimes uſe for the weakneſs of mine eyes) a pocket perſpective, and ſome other little conveniencies; which being of no conſequence to the emperor, I did not think myſelf bound in honour to diſcover, and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled, if I ventured them out of my poſſeſſion.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author diverts the emperor and his nobility of both ſexes in a very uncommon manner. The diverſions of the court of Lilliput *deſcribed. The author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.*

MY gentleneſs and good behaviour had gained ſo far on the emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army, and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a ſhort time. I took all poſſible methods to cultivate this favourable diſpoſition. The natives came by degrees to be leſs apprehenſive of any danger from me. I would ſometimes lie down, and let five or ſix of them dance on my hand: and at laſt the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and ſeek in my hair. I had now made a good progreſs in underſtanding and ſpeaking their language. The emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with ſeveral of the country ſhows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known both for dexterity and magnificence I was diverted with none ſo much as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a ſlender white thread, extended about two feet and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I ſhall deſire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This

This diverſion is only practiſed by thoſe perſons, who are candidates for great employments, and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or diſgrace (which often happens) five or ſix of thoſe candidates petition the emperor to entertain his majeſty and the court with a dance on the rope, and whoever jumps the higheſt without falling, ſucceeds in the office. Very often the chief miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their ſkill, and to convince the emperor, that they have not loſt their faculty. *Flimnap*, the treaſurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the ſtrait rope at leaſt an inch higher, than any other lord in the whole empire. I have ſeen him do the ſummerſet [a] ſeveral times together upon a trencher, fixed on a rope, which is no thicker than a common packthread in *England*. My friend *Reldreſal*, principal ſecretary for private affairs, is in my opinion, if I am not partial, the ſecond after the treaſurer; the reſt of the great officers are much upon a par.

Theſe diverſions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myſelf have ſeen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater, when the miniſters themſelves are com-

[a] Summerſet, or ſummerſault, a gambol of a tumbler, in which he ſprings up, turns heels over head in the air, and comes down upon his feet.

manded

manded to ſhew their dexterity; for, by contending to excel themſelves and their fellows, they ſtrain ſo far, that there is hardly one of them, who hath not received a fall, and ſome of them two or three. I was aſſured, that a year or two before my arrival *Flimnap* would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the king's cuſhions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewiſe another diverſion, which is only ſhewn before the emperor and empreſs, and firſt miniſter, upon particular occaſions. The emperor lays on the table three fine ſilken threads of ſix inches long; one is blue, the other red, and the third green. Theſe threads are propoſed as prizes for thoſe perſons, whom the emperor hath a mind to diſtinguiſh by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his majeſty's great chamber of ſtate, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and ſuch as I have not obſerved the leaſt reſemblance of in any other country of the old or new world. The emperor holds a ſtick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by one, ſometimes leap over the ſtick, ſometimes creep under it backwards and forwards ſeveral times, according as the ſtick is advanced or depreſſed. Sometimes the emperor holds one end of the ſtick, and his firſt miniſter the other; ſometimes the miniſter has it entirely to himſelf.

Whoever performs his part with moſt agility, and holds out the longeſt in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured ſilk; the red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the middle; and you ſee few great perſons about this court, who are not adorned with one of theſe girdles.

The horſes of the army, and thoſe of the royal ſtables, having been daily led before me, were no longer ſhy, but would come up to my very feet without ſtarting. The riders would leap them over my hand, as I held it on the ground; and one of the emperor's huntſmen upon a large courſer took my foot, ſhoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I deſired he would order ſeveral ſticks of two feet high, and the thickneſs of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his majeſty commanded the maſter of his woods to give directions accordingly, and the next morning ſix woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horſes to each. I took nine of theſe ſticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half ſquare, I took four other ſticks, and tied them parallel at each corner about two feet from the ground; then I faſtened my handkerchief to the nine ſticks that ſtood erect; and extended it on all ſides, till it was tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel

rallel ſticks, riſing about five inches higher than the handkerchief, ſerved as ledges on each ſide. When I had finiſhed my work, I deſired the emperor to let a troop of his beſt horſe, twenty-four in number, come and exerciſe upon this plain. His majeſty approved of the propoſal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exerciſe them. As ſoon as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock ſkirmiſhes, diſcharged blunt arrows, drew their ſwords, fled and purſued, attacked and retired, and in ſhort diſcovered the beſt military diſcipline I ever beheld. The parallel ſticks ſecured them and their horſes from falling over the ſtage; and the emperor was ſo much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated ſeveral days, and once was pleaſed to be lifted up, and give the word of command; and, with great difficulty, perſuaded even the empreſs herſelf to let me hold her in her cloſe chair within two yards of the ſtage, from whence ſhe was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune, that no ill accident happened in theſe entertainments, only once a fiery horſe, that belonged to one of the captains, pawing with his hoof ſtruck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot ſlipping he overthrew his rider and himſelf; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I ſet down the troop with the other, in the ſame manner as I took them up. The

horſe that fell was ſtrained in the left ſhoulder, but the rider got no hurt, and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could; however, I would not truſt to the ſtrength of it any more in ſuch dangerous enterprizes.

About two or three days before I was ſet at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with this kind of feats, there arrived an expreſs to inform his majeſty, that ſome of his ſubjects, riding near the place where I was firſt taken up, had ſeen a great black ſubſtance lying on the ground, very oddly ſhaped, extending its edges round as wide as his majeſty's bed-chamber, and riſing up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they at firſt apprehended, for it lay on the graſs without motion; and ſome of them had walked round it ſeveral times; that, by mounting upon each other's ſhoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and, ſtamping upon it, they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be ſomething belonging to the *man-mountain*; and if his majeſty pleaſed, they would undertake to bring it with only five horſes. I preſently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It ſeems, upon my firſt reaching the ſhore after our ſhipwreck I was in ſuch confuſion, that, before I came to the place where I went to ſleep, my hat, which I had faſtened with a ſtring to my head while I was rowing, and had ſtuck on all the time I was ſwimming, fell off after I came to land; the

the ſtring, as I conjecture, breaking by ſome accident, which I never obſerved, but thought my hat had been loſt at ſea. I intreated his imperial majeſty to give orders, it might be brought to me as ſoon as poſſible, deſcribing to him the uſe and the nature of it: and the next day the waggoners arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the brim within an inch and half of the edge, and faſtened two hooks in the holes; theſe hooks were tied by a long cord to the harneſs, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an *engliſh* mile; but, the ground in that country being extremely ſmooth and level, it received leſs damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure the emperor, having ordered that part of his army, which quarters in and about his metropolis, to be in a readineſs, took a fancy of diverting himſelf in a very ſingular manner. He deſired I would ſtand like a *coloſſus*, with my legs as far aſunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in cloſe order, and march them under me; the foot by twenty-four in a breaſt, and the horſe by ſixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body conſiſted of three thouſand foot, and a thouſand horſe. His majeſty gave orders, upon pain of death, that every ſoldier in his march ſhould obſerve the ſtricteſt decency with regard to my perſon; which however could not pre-

vent ſome of the younger officers from turning up their eyes, as they paſſed under me: and, to confeſs the truth, my breeches were at that time in ſo ill a condition, that they afforded ſome opportunities for laughter and admiration.

I had ſent ſo many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his majeſty at length mentioned the matter firſt in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was oppoſed by none, except *Skyreſh Bolgolam*, who was pleaſed, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried againſt him by the whole board, and confirmed by the emperor. That miniſter was *galbet*, or admiral of the realm, very much in his maſter's confidence, and a perſon well verſed in affairs, but of a moroſe and ſour complexion. However he was at length perſuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I ſhould be ſet free, and to which I muſt ſwear, ſhould be drawn up by himſelf. Theſe articles were brought to me by *Skyreſh Bolgolam* in perſon, attended by two under-ſecretaries, and ſeveral perſons of diſtinction. After they were read, I was demanded to ſwear to the performance of them; firſt in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method preſcribed by their laws, which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, and to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But becauſe the reader may be curious to have ſome idea of the ſtyle and manner

ner of expreſſion peculiar to that people, as well to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a tranſlation of the whole inſtrument word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

Golbaſto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, moſt mighty emperor of *Lilliput*, delight and terror of the univerſe, whoſe dominions extend five thouſand *bluſtrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the ſons of men; whoſe feet preſs down to the center, and whoſe head ſtrikes againſt the ſun; at whoſe nod the princes of the earth ſhake their knees; pleaſant as the ſpring, comfortable as the ſummer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His moſt ſublime majeſty propoſeth to the *man-mountain*, lately arrived at our celeſtial dominions, the following articles, which by a ſolemn oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

1*ſt*, The *man-mountain* ſhall not depart from our dominions without our licence under our great ſeal.

2*d*, He ſhall not preſume to come into our metropolis without our expreſs order; at which time the inhabitants ſhall have two hours warning to keep within doors.

3*d*, The ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

4th, As he walks the ſaid roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving ſubjects, their horſes, or carriages, nor take any of our ſubjects into his hands without their own conſent.

5th, If an expreſs requires extraordinary diſpatch, the *man-mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his pocket the meſſenger and horſe a a ſix days journey once in every moon, and return the ſaid meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our imperial preſence.

6th, He ſhall be our ally againſt our enemies in the iſland of *Blefuſcu* [a], and do his utmoſt to deſtroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, at his times of leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great ſtones, towards covering the wall of the principal park and other our royal buildings.

8th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, in two moons time, deliver in an exact ſurvey of the circumference of our dominions by a computation of his own paces round the coaſt.

Laſtly, That, upon his ſolemn oath to obſerve all the above articles, the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall have a daily allowance of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 of our ſubjects, with free acceſs to our royal perſon,

[a] In his deſcription of *Lilliput* he ſeems to have had *England* more immediately in view. In his deſcription of *Blefuſcu*, he ſeems to intend the people and kingdom of *France*. ORRERY.

and

and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at *Belfaborac*, the twelfth day of the ninety-firſt moon of our reign.

I ſwore and ſubſcribed to theſe articles with great chearfulneſs and content, although ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the malice of *Skyreſh Bolgolam*, the high admiral; whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The emperor himſelf in perſon did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgments by proſtrating myſelf at his majeſty's feet: but he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious expreſſions, which, to avoid the cenſure of vanity, I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful ſervant, and well deſerve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that, in the laſt article for the recovery of my liberty, the emperor ſtipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 *Lilliputians*. Some time after aſking a friend at court, how they came to fix on that determinate number; he told me, that his majeſty's mathematicians having taken the heighth of my body by the help of a *quadrant*, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the ſimilarity of their bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently

ly would require as much food as was neceſſary to ſupport that number of *Lilliputians*. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact œconomy of ſo great a prince.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, *the metropolis of* Lilliput, *deſcribed, together with the emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the emperor in his wars.*

THE firſt requeſt I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to ſee *Mildendo*, the metropolis; which the emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houſes. The people had notice by proclamation of my deſign to viſit the town. The wall, which encompaſſed it, is two feet and a half high, and at leaſt eleven inches broad, ſo that a coach and horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong towers at ten feet diſtance. I ſtept over the great weſtern gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling, through the two principal ſtreets, only in my ſhort waiſt-coat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eves of the houſes with the ſkirts of my coat. I walked with the utmoſt circumſpection to avoid treading

ing on any ſtragglers, who might remain in the ſtreets; although the orders were very ſtrict, that all people ſhould keep in their houſes at their own peril. The garret-windows and tops of houſes were ſo crouded with ſpectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not ſeen a more populous place. The city is an exact ſquare, each ſide of the wall being five hundred feet long. The two great ſtreets, which run croſs and divide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thouſand ſouls: the houſes are from three to five ſtories: the ſhops and markets well provided.

The emperor's palace is in the center of the city, where the two great ſtreets meet. It is incloſed by a wall of two feet high, and twenty feet diſtance from the buildings. I had his majeſty's permiſſion to ſtep over this wall; and the ſpace being ſo wide between that and the palace, I could eaſily view it on every ſide. The outward court is a ſquare of forty feet, and includes two other courts: in the inmoſt are the royal apartments, which I was very deſirous to ſee, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates, from one ſquare into another, were but eighteen inches high, and ſeven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at leaſt five feet high, and it was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them without

out, infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were ſtrongly built of hewn ſtone, and four inches thick. At the ſame time the emperor had a great deſire, that I ſhould ſee the magnificence of his palace; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which I ſpent in cutting down with my knife ſome of the largeſt trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards diſtance from the city. Of theſe trees I made two ſtools, each about three feet high, and ſtrong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a ſecond time, I went again through the city to the palace with my two ſtools in my hands. When I came to the ſide of the outer court, I ſtood upon one ſtool, and took the other in my hand; this I lifted over the roof, and gently ſet it down on the ſpace between the firſt and ſecond court, which was eight feet wide. I then ſtept over the building very conveniently from one ſtool to the other, and drew up the firſt after me with a hooked ſtick. By this contrivance I got into the inmoſt court; and, lying down upon my ſide, I applied my face to the windows of the middle ſtories, which were left open on purpoſe, and diſcovered the moſt ſplendid apartments that can be imagined. There I ſaw the empreſs and the young princes in their ſeveral lodgings with their chief attendants about them. Her imperial majeſty was pleaſed to ſmile very graciouſly upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiſs.

But

But I ſhall not anticipate the reader with farther deſcriptions of this kind, becauſe I reſerve them for a greater work, which is now almoſt ready for the preſs, containing a general deſcription of this empire, from its firſt erection, through a long ſeries of princes, with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion, their plants and animals, their peculiar manners and cuſtoms, with other matters very curious and uſeful; my chief deſign at preſent being only to relate ſuch events and tranſactions, as happened to the public or to myſelf, during a reſidence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, *Reldreſal*, principal ſecretary (as they ſtile him) for private affairs, came to my houſe attended only by one ſervant. He ordered his coach to wait at a diſtance, and deſired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily conſented to, on account of his quality and perſonal merits, as well as of the many good offices he had done me during my ſollicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he choſe rather to let me hold him in my hand during our converſation. He began with compliments on my liberty; ſaid, he might pretend to ſome merit in it: but however added, that, if it had not been for the preſent ſituation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it ſo ſoon. For, ſaid he, as flouriſhing a condition as we may

may appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invaſion by a moſt potent enemy from abroad. As to the firſt, you are to underſtand, that for above ſeventy moons paſt there have been two ſtruggling parties in this empire, under the names of *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*[a], from the high and low heels of their ſhoes, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves. It is alledged indeed, that the high heels are moſt agreeable to our ancient conſtitution; but, however this be, his majeſty hath determined to make uſe only of low heels in the adminiſtration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the crown, as you cannot but obſerve; and particularly, that his majeſty's imperial heels are lower at leaſt by a *drurr* than any of his court (*drurr* is a meaſure about the fourteenth part of an inch.) The animoſities between theſe two parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the *Tramecksan*, or high-heels, to exceed us in number; but the power is wholly on our ſide. We apprehend his imperial highneſs, the heir to the crown, to have ſome tendency towards the high-heels; at leaſt, we can plainly diſcover, that one of his

[a] High-church and low-church, or whig and tory. As every *accidental difference* between man and man in perſon and circumſtances is by this work rendered extremely contemptible; ſo *ſpeculative differences* are ſhewn to be equally ridiculous, when the zeal with which they are oppoſed and defended too much exceeds their importance.

heels is higher than the other, which gives him a hobble in his gate. Now, in the midſt of theſe inteſtine diſquiets we are threatened with an invaſion from the iſland of *Blefuſcu*, which is the other great empire of the univerſe, almoſt as large and powerful as this of his majeſty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and ſtates in the world inhabited by human creatures as large as yourſelf, our philoſophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the ſtars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred mortals of your bulk would in a ſhort time deſtroy all the fruits and cattle of his majeſty's dominions: beſides, our hiſtories of ſix thouſand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of *Lilliput* and *Blefuſcu*. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a moſt obſtinate war for ſix and thirty moons paſt. It began upon the following occaſion: it is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger end; but his preſent majeſty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the antient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon, the emperor, his father, publiſhed an edict, commanding all his ſubjects, upon great penalties, to break the ſmaller end of their eggs. The people ſo highly reſented this law, that our hiſtories tell us,

us, there have been ſix rebellions raiſed on that account; wherein one emperor loſt his life, and another his crown. Theſe civil commotions were conſtantly fomented by the monarchs of *Blefuſcu*; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed that eleven thouſand perſons have at ſeveral times ſuffered death, rather than ſubmit to break their eggs at the ſmaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been publiſhed upon this controverſy; but the books of the *Big-endians* have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the courſe of theſe troubles, the emperors of *Blefuſcu* did frequently expoſtulate by their ambaſſadors, accuſing us of making a ſchiſm in religion by offending againſt a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet *Luſtrog*, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the *Blundecral* (which is their *Alcoran.)* This however is thought to be a mere ſtrain upon the text; for the words are theſe: *that all true believers break their eggs at the convenient end.* And which is the convenient end, ſeems in my humble opinion to be left to every man's conſcience, or at leaſt in the power of the chief magiſtrate to determine. Now, the *Big-endian* exiles have found ſo much credit in the emperor of *Blefuſcu*'s court, and ſo much private aſſiſtance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war had been carried on between the two empires for ſix and thirty

thirty moons, with various ſucceſs; during which time we have loſt forty capital ſhips, and a much greater number of ſmaller veſſels, together with thirty thouſand of our beſt ſeamen and ſoldiers; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be ſomewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are juſt preparing to make a deſcent upon us; and his imperial majeſty, placing great confidence in your valour and ſtrength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I deſired the ſecretary to preſent my humble duty to the emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready with the hazard of my life to defend his perſon and ſtate againſt all invaders *.

* *Gulliver*, without examining the ſubject of diſpute, readily engaged to defend the emperor againſt invaſion; becauſe he knew that no ſuch monarch had a right to invade the dominions of another, though for the propagation of truth.

CHAP. V.

The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the emperor of Blefuſcu, *and ſue for peace. The empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident; the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace.*

THE empire of *Blefuſcu* is an iſland ſituated to the north-eaſt ſide of *Lilliput*, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet ſeen it, and upon this notice of an intended invaſion I avoided appearing on that ſide of the coaſt, for fear of being diſcovered by ſome of the enemy's ſhips, who had received no intelligence of me, all intercourſe between the two empires having been ſtrictly forbidden during the war upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our emperor upon all veſſels whatſoever. I communicated to his majeſty a project I had formed of ſeizing the enemy's whole fleet: which, as our ſcouts aſſured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to ſail with the firſt fair wind. I conſulted the moſt experienced ſeamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plummed; who told me, that in the middle at high-water it was ſeventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about ſix feet of *european* meaſure; and the reſt of it fifty *glumgluffs*

gluffs at moſt. I walked towards the north-eaſt coaſt, overagainſt *Blefuſcu*; where, lying down behind a hillock, I took out my ſmall perſpective-glaſs, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, conſiſting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of tranſports: I then came back to my houſe, and gave orders (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the ſtrongeſt cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as pack-thread, and the bars of the length and ſize of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it ſtronger, and for the ſame reaſon I twiſted three of the iron bars together, bending the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-eaſt coaſt, and putting off my coat, ſhoes, and ſtockings, walked into the ſea in my leathern jerkin about half an hour before high-water. I waded with what haſte I could, and ſwam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground; I arrived at the fleet in leſs than half an hour. The enemy was ſo frighted, when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their ſhips, and ſwam to ſhore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand ſouls: I then took my tackling, and, faſtening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand arrows, many of which ſtuck in my hands and face; and, beſides the exceſſive ſmart, gave me much diſturbance in my work. My

greateſt apprehenſion was for mine eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little neceſſaries a pair of ſpectacles in a private pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the emperor's ſearchers. Theſe I took out and faſtened as ſtrongly as I could upon my noſe, and thus armed went on boldly with my work in ſpight of the enemy's arrows, many of which ſtruck againſt the glaſſes of my ſpectacles, but without any other effect, farther than a little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtened all the hooks, and taking the knot in my hand began to pull; but not a ſhip would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their anchors, ſo that the boldeſt part of my enterprize remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ſhips, I reſolutely cut with my knife the cables that faſtened the anchors, receiving above two hundred ſhots in my face and hands; then I took up the knotted end of the cables, to which my hooks were tied, and with great eaſe drew fifty of the enemy's largeſt men of war after me.

The *Bleſuſcudians*, who had not the leaſt imagination of what I intended, were at firſt confounded with aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the cables, and thought my deſign was only to let the ſhips run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and ſaw me pulling at the end, they ſet up ſuch a ſcream of grief and

deſpair, as it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I ſtopt a while to pick out the arrows, that ſtuck in my hands and face; and rubbed on ſome of the ſame ointment, that was given me at my firſt arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my ſpectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived ſafe at the royal port of *Lilliput*.

The emperor and his whole court ſtood on the ſhore expecting the iſſue of this great adventure. They ſaw the ſhips move forward in a large half-moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my breaſt in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, becauſe I was under water to my neck. The emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in an hoſtile manner: but he was ſoon eaſed of his fears, for the channel growing ſhallower every ſtep I made, I came in a ſhort time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable, by which the fleet was faſtened, I cried in a loud voice, *long live the moſt puiſſant emperor of Lilliput!* This great prince received me at my landing with all poſſible encomiums, and created me a *Nardac* upon the ſpot, which is the higheſt title of honour among them.

His majeſty deſired, I would take ſome other opportunity of bringing all the reſt of his enemy's ſhips into his ports. And ſo unmeaſur-

able is the ambition of princes, that he ſeemed to think of nothing leſs than reducing the whole empire of *Blefuſcu* into a province, and governing it by a vice-roy; of deſtroying the *Big-endian* exiles, and compelling that people to break the ſmaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the ſole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this deſign by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as juſtice: and I plainly proteſted, that I would never be an inſtrument of bringing a free and brave people into ſlavery. And, when the matter was debated in council, the wiſeſt part of the miniſtry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was ſo oppoſite to the ſchemes and politicks of his imperial majeſty, that he could never forgive me; he mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where I was told that ſome of the wiſeſt appeared at leaſt by their ſilence to be of my opinion; but others, who were my ſecret enemies, could not forbear ſome expreſſions, which by a ſide-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his majeſty, and a junto of miniſters maliciouſly bent againſt me, which broke out in leſs than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter deſtruction. Of ſo little weight are the greateſt ſervices to princes, when put into the ballance with a refuſal to gratify their paſſions.

About

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a ſolemn ambaſſy from *Blefuſcu* with humble offers of a peace; which was ſoon concluded upon conditions very advantageous to our emperor, wherewith I ſhall not trouble the reader. There were ſix ambaſſadors, with a train of about five hundred perſons; and their entry was very magnificent, ſuitable to the grandeur of their maſter, and the importance of their buſineſs. When their treaty was finiſhed, wherein I did them ſeveral good offices by the credit I now had, or at leaſt appeared to have at court, their excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a viſit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generoſity, invited me to that kingdom in the emperor their maſter's name, and deſired me to ſhew them ſome proofs of my prodigious ſtrength, of which they had heard ſo many wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but ſhall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for ſome time entertained their excellencies to their infinite ſatisfaction and ſurprize, I deſired they would do me the honour to preſent my moſt humble reſpects to the emperor their maſter, the renown of whoſe virtues had ſo juſtly filled the whole world with admiration, and whoſe royal perſon I reſolved to attend before I returned to my own country: accordingly, the next time I had the honour to ſee our emperor, I deſired his ge-

neral licence to wait on the *Blefuſcudian* monarch, which he was pleaſed to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not gueſs the reaſon, till I had a whiſper from a certain perſon, that *Flimnap* and *Bolgolam* had repreſented my intercourſe with thoſe ambaſſadors as a mark of diſaffection, from which I am ſure my heart was wholly free. And this was the firſt time I began to conceive ſome imperfect idea of courts and miniſters.

It is to be obſerved, that theſe ambaſſadors ſpoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in *Europe*, and each nation priding itſelf upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our emperor, ſtanding upon the advantage he had got by the ſeizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their ſpeech in the *Lilliputian* tongue. And it muſt be confeſſed, that from the great intercourſe of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the cuſtom in each empire to ſend their young nobility and richer gentry to the other in order to poliſh themſelves by ſeeing the world, and underſtanding men and manners; there are few perſons of diſtinction, or merchants, or ſeamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold converſation in both tongues; as I found

found ſome weeks after, when I went to pay my reſpects to the emperor of *Bleſuſcu*, which in the midſt of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I ſhall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were ſome which I diſliked upon account of their being too ſervile, neither could any thing but an extreme neceſſity have forced me to ſubmit. But being now a *nardac* of the higheſt rank in that empire, ſuch offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the emperor (to do him juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an opportunity of doing his majeſty, at leaſt, as I then thought, a moſt ſignal ſervice. I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many hundred people at my door; by which being ſuddenly awaked, I was in ſome kind of terror. I heard the word *Burglum* repeated inceſſantly: ſeveral of the emperor's court, making their way through the croud, intreated me to come immediately to the palace, where her imperial majeſty's apartment was on fire by the careleſneſs of a maid of honour, who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading a romance. I got up in an inſtant; and orders being given to clear the way before me, and it being likewiſe a moonſhine night, I made a ſhift to get to the palace without trampling on any of the people

I found

I found they had already applied ladders to the walls of the apartment, and were well provided with buckets, but the water was at ſome diſtance. Theſe buckets were about the ſize of a large thimble, and the poor people ſupplied me with them as faſt as they could; but the flame was ſo violent, that they did little good. I might eaſily have ſtifled it with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for haſte, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. The caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable, and this magnificent palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the ground, if by a preſence of mind unuſual to me I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I had the evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious wine called *Glimigrim* (the *Blefuſcadians* call it *Flunec*, but ours is eſteemed the better ſort) which is very diuretic. By the luckieſt chance in the world I had not diſcharged myſelf of any part of it. The heat I had contracted by coming very near the flames, and by labouring to quench them, made the wine begin to operate by urine; which I voided in ſuch a quantity, and applied ſo well to the proper places, that in three minutes the fire was wholly extinguiſhed, and the reſt of that noble pile, which had coſt ſo many ages in erecting, preſerved from deſtruction.

It was now day-light, and I returned to my houſe without waiting to congratulate with the emperor; becauſe, although I had done a very

very eminent piece of ſervice, yet I could not tell how his majeſty might reſent the manner, by which I had performed it: for, by the fundamental laws of the realm, it is capital in any perſon, of what quality ſoever, to make water within the precincts of the palace. But I was a little comforted by a meſſage from his majeſty, that he would give orders to the grand juſticiary for paſſing my pardon in form; which however I could not obtain. And I was privately aſſured, that the empreſs, conceiving the greateſt abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the moſt diſtant ſide of the court, firmly reſolved that thoſe buildings ſhould never be repaired for her uſe; and, in the preſence of her chief confidents, could not forbear vowing revenge.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; *their learning, laws, and cuſtoms, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.*

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the deſcription of this empire to a particular treatiſe, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with ſome general ideas. As the common ſize of the natives is ſomewhat under ſix inches high, ſo there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for inſtance, the talleſt

talleſt horſes and oxen are between four and five inches in heighth, the ſheep an inch and half, more or leſs; their geeſe about the bigneſs of a ſparrow, and ſo the ſeveral gradations downwards, till you come to the ſmalleſt, which to my ſight were almoſt inviſible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the *Lilliputians* to all objects proper for their view: they ſee with great exactneſs, but at no great diſtance. And, to ſhew the ſharpneſs of their ſight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed with obſerving a cook pulling a lark, which was not ſo large as a common fly; and a young girl threading an inviſible needle with inviſible ſilk. Their talleſt trees are about ſeven feet high: I mean ſome of thoſe in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but juſt reach with my fiſt clinched. The other vegetables are in the ſame proportion: but this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I ſhall ſay but little at preſent of their learning, which for many ages hath flouriſhed in all its branches among them: but their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the *europeans*; nor from the right to the left, like the *arabians*; nor from up to down, like the *chineſe*; but aſlant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in *England*.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downwards, becauſe they hold an opinion, that in eleven thouſand moons they are all

all to riſe again, in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upſide down, and by this means they ſhall at their reſurrection be found ready ſtanding on their feet. The learned among them confeſs the abſurdity of this doctrine, but the practice ſtill continues in compliance to the vulgar.

There are ſome laws and cuſtoms in this empire very peculiar; and, if they were not ſo directly contrary to thoſe of my own dear country, I ſhould be tempted to ſay a little in their juſtification. It is only to be wiſhed they were as well executed. The firſt I ſhall mention, relates to informers. All crimes againſt the ſtate are puniſhed here with the utmoſt ſeverity; but, if the perſon accuſed maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuſer is immediately put to an ignominious death; and out of his goods or lands the innocent perſon is quadruply recompenſed for the loſs of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardſhip of his impriſonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. Or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely ſupplied by the crown. The emperor alſo confers on him ſome publick mark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore ſeldom fail to puniſh it with death; for they alledge, that care and vigilance, with a very common underſtanding, may preſerve a man's goods from thieves, but honeſly

honeſty has no fence againſt ſuperior cunning; and ſince it is neceſſary that there ſhould be a perpetual intercourſe of buying and ſelling, and dealing upon credit; where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to puniſh it, the honeſt dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the king for a criminal, who had wronged his maſter of a great ſum of money, which he had received by order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his majeſty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of truſt; the emperor thought it monſtrous in me to offer as a defence the greateſt aggravation of the crime; and truly I had little to ſay in return, farther than the common anſwer, that different nations had different cuſtoms; for, I confeſs, I was heartily aſhamed [a].

Although we uſually call reward and puniſhment the two hinges, upon which all government turns, yet I could never obſerve this maxim to be put in practice by any nation, except that of *Lilliput*. Whoever can there bring ſufficient proof, that he hath ſtrictly obſerved the laws of his country for ſeventy-three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable ſum of money out of a fund appropriated for that uſe: he likewiſe acquires the title of *ſnilpall*, or *legal*, which is added to

[a] An act of parliament hath been ſince paſſed, by which ſome breaches of truſt have been made capital.

his

his name, but doth not deſcend to his poſterity. And theſe people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when I told them, that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account, that the image of juſtice in their courts of judicature is formed with ſix eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each ſide one, to ſignify circumſpection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a ſword ſheathed in her left, to ſhew ſhe is more diſpoſed to reward than to puniſh.

In chuſing perſons for all employments they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities; for, ſince government is neceſſary to mankind, they believe that the common ſize of human underſtanding is fitted to ſome ſtation or other, and that providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a myſtery to be comprehended only by a few perſons of ſublime genius, of which there ſeldom are three born in an age: but they ſuppoſe truth, juſtice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's power, the practice of which virtues, aſſiſted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the ſervice of his country, except where a courſe of ſtudy is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was ſo far from being ſupplied by ſuperior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into ſuch dangerous hands as thoſe of perſons ſo qualified; and at leaſt, that the miſtakes committed by

by ignorance in a virtuous diſpoſition would never be of ſuch fatal conſequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whoſe inclinations led him to be corrupt, and who had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the diſbelief of a divine providence renders a man uncapable of holding any public ſtation; for, ſince kings avow themſelves to be the deputies of providence, the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more abſurd than for a prince to employ ſuch men as diſown the authority, under which he acteth.

In relating theſe and the following laws, I would only be underſtood to mean the original inſtitutions, and not the moſt ſcandalous corruptions, into which theſe people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and diſtinction by leaping over ſticks, and creeping under them, the reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt introduced by the grandfather of the emperor now reigning, and grew to the preſent heighth by the gradual increaſe of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in ſome other countries; for they reaſon thus, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, muſt needs be a common enemy to the reſt of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore ſuch a man is not fit to live.

Their

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. For, ſince the conjunction of male and female is founded upon the great law of nature in order to propagate and continue the ſpecies, the *Lilliputians* will needs have it, that men and women are joined together like other animals by the motives of concupiſcence; and that their tenderneſs towards their young proceeds from the like natural principle: for which reaſon they will never allow, that a child is under any obligation to his father for begetting him, or to his mother for bringing him into the world, which, conſidering the miſeries of human life, was neither a benefit in itſelf, nor intended ſo by his parents, whoſe thoughts in their love-encounters were otherwiſe employed. Upon theſe, and the like reaſonings, their opinion is, that parents are the laſt of all others to be truſted with the education of their own children: and therefore they have in every town public nurſeries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to ſend their infants of both ſexes to be reared and educated when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are ſuppoſed to have ſome rudiments of docility. Theſe ſchools are of ſeveral kinds, ſuited to different qualities, and to both ſexes. They have certain profeſſors well ſkilled in preparing children for ſuch a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as

inclinations. I ſhall firſt ſay ſomething of the male nurſeries, and then of the female.

The nurſeries for males of noble or eminent birth are provided with grave and learned profeſſors, and their ſeveral deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and ſimple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, juſtice, courage, modeſty, clemency, religion, and love of their country; they are always employed in ſome buſineſs, except in the times of eating and ſleeping, which are very ſhort, and two hours for diverſions conſiſting of bodily exerciſes. They are dreſſed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dreſs themſelves, although their quality be ever ſo great; and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the moſt menial offices. They are never ſuffered to converſe with ſervants, but go together in ſmaller or greater numbers to take their diverſions, and always in the preſence of a profeſſor, or one of his deputies; whereby they avoid thoſe early bad impreſſions of folly and vice, to which our children are ſubject. Their parents are ſuffered to ſee them only twice a year; the viſit is to laſt but an hour; they are allowed to kiſs the child at meeting and parting; but a profeſſor, who always ſtands by on thoſe occaſions, will not ſuffer them to whiſper, or uſe any fondling expreſſions, or bring any preſents of toys, ſweetmeats, and the like.

The penſion from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure

ſure of due payment, is levied by the emperor's officers.

The nurſeries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame manner; only thoſe deſigned for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas thoſe of perſons of quality continue in their exerciſes till fifteen, which anſwers to twenty-one with us: but the confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three years.

In the female nurſeries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dreſſed by orderly ſervants of their own ſex; but always in the preſence of a profeſſor or deputy, till they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five years old. And if it be found, that theſe nurſes ever preſume to entertain the girls with frightful or fooliſh ſtories, or the common follies practiſed by chamber-maids among us, they are publickly whipped thrice about the city, impriſoned for a year, and baniſhed for life to the moſt deſolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much aſhamed of being cowards and fools, as the men, and deſpiſe all perſonal ornaments beyond decency and cleanlineſs: neither did I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of ſex, only that the exerciſes of the females were not altogether ſo robuſt; and that ſome rules were given them relating to domeſtick life, and a ſmaller compaſs of learning was enjoined them: for their

maxim is, that, among people of quality, a wife ſhould be always a reaſonable and agreeable companion, becauſe ſhe cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home with great expreſſions of gratitude to the profeſſors, and ſeldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurſeries of females of the meaner ſort the children are inſtructed in all kinds of works proper for their ſex, and their ſeveral degrees: thoſe intended for apprentices are diſmiſſed at ſeven years old, the reſt are kept to eleven.

The meaner families, who have children at theſe nurſeries, are obliged, beſides their annual penſion, which is as low as poſſible, to return to the ſteward of the nurſery a ſmall monthly ſhare of their gettings to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expences by the law. For the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more unjuſt, than for people, in ſubſervience to their own appetites, to bring children into the world, and leave the burthen of ſupporting them on the public. As to perſons of quality, they give ſecurity to appropriate a certain ſum for each child, ſuitable to their condition; and theſe funds are always managed with good huſbandry, and the moſt exact juſtice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their buſineſs being only to till and

and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little conſequence to the public: but the old and diſeaſed among them are ſupported by hoſpitals: for begging is a trade unknown in this empire.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give ſome account of my domeſtics, and my manner of living in this country during a reſidence of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewiſe forced by neceſſity, I had made for myſelf a table and chair convenient enough out of the largeſt trees in the royal park. Two hundred ſempſtreſſes were employed to make me ſhirts, and linnen for my bed and table, all of the ſtrongeſt and coarſeſt kind they could get; which however they were forced to quilt together in ſeveral folds, for the thickeſt was ſome degrees finer than lawn. Their linnen is uſually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. The ſempſtreſſes took my meaſure as I lay on the ground, one ſtanding at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a ſtrong cord extended, that each held by the end, while a third meaſured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they meaſured my right thumb, and deſired no more; for by a mathematical computation, that twice round the thumb is once round the wriſt, and ſo on to the neck and the waiſt, and by the help of my old ſhirt, which I diſplayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me ex-

actly. Three hundred taylors were employed in the ſame manner to make me clothes; but they had another contrivance for taking my meaſure. I kneeled down, and they raiſed a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plum-line from my collar to the floor, which juſt anſwered the length of my coat; but my waiſt and arms I meaſured myſelf. When my clothes were finiſhed, which was done in my houſe (for the largeſt of theirs would not have been able to hold them) they looked like the patch-work made by the ladies in *England*, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dreſs my victuals in little convenient huts built about my houſe, where they and their families lived, and prepared me two diſhes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table; an hundred more attended below on the ground, ſome with diſhes of meat, and ſome with barrels of wine, and other liquors, ſlung on their ſhoulders; all which the waiters above drew up, as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in *Europe*. A diſh of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reaſonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a ſirloin ſo large, that I have been forced to make three bits of it; but this is rare. My ſervants were aſtoniſhed to ſee me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we

we do the leg of a lark. Their geeſe and turkies I uſually eat at a mouthful, and I muſt confeſs, they far exceed ours. Of their ſmaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his imperial majeſty, being informed of my way of living, deſired that himſelf and his royal conſort, with the young princes of the blood of both ſexes, might have the happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed them in chairs of ſtate upon my table, juſt overagainſt me, with their guards about them. *Flimnap*, the lord high treaſurer, attended there likewiſe with his white ſtaff; and I obſerved he often looked on me with a ſour countenance, which I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than uſual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have ſome private reaſons to believe, that this viſit from his majeſty gave *Flimnap* an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his maſter. That miniſter had always been my ſecret enemy, though he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the moroſeneſs of his nature. He repreſented to the emperor the low condition of his treaſury; that he was forced to take up money at great diſcount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine *per cent.* below par; that I had coſt his majeſty above a million and a half of *ſprugs* (their greateſt gold coin, about the bigneſs of a ſpangle) and upon the whole, that it would be adviſeable in the

emperor to take the firſt fair occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent ſufferer upon my account. The treaſurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of ſome evil tongues, who informed him that her grace had taken a violent affection for my perſon; and the court ſcandal ran for ſome time, that ſhe once came privately to my lodging. This I ſolemnly declare to be a moſt infamous falſhood, without any grounds, farther than that her grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendſhip. I own ſhe came often to my houſe, but always publickly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were uſually her ſiſter and young daughter, and ſome particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I ſtill appeal to my ſervants round, whether they at any time ſaw a coach at my door, without knowing what perſons were in it. On thoſe occaſions, when a ſervant had given me notice, my cuſtom was to go immediately to the door; and, after paying my reſpects, to take up the coach and two horſes very carefully in my hands (for, if there were ſix horſes, the poſtillion always unharneſſed four) and placed them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horſes at once on my table full

full of company, while I ſat in my chair, leaning my face towards them; and, when I was engaged with one ſet, the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have paſſed many an afternoon very agreeably in theſe converſations. But I defy the treaſurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let them make their beſt of it) *Cluſtril* and *Drunlo*, to prove that any perſon ever came to me *incognito*, except the ſecretary *Reldreſal*, who was ſent by expreſs command of his imperial majeſty, as I have before related. I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is ſo nearly concerned, to ſay nothing of my own, though I then had the honour to be a *nardac*, which the treaſurer himſelf is not; for all the world knows, that he is only a *glumglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a marqueſs is to a duke in *England*; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his poſt. Theſe falſe informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the treaſurer ſhew his lady for ſome time an ill countenance, and me a worſe; and although he was at laſt undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I loſt all credit with him, and found my intereſt decline very faſt with the emperor himſelf, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high-treaſon, maketh his eſcape to Blefuſcu. *His reception there.*

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue, which had been for two months forming againſt me.

I had been hitherto all my life a ſtranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanneſs of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the diſpoſitions of great princes and miniſters; but never expected to have found ſuch terrible effects of them in ſo remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from thoſe in *Europe*.

When I was juſt preparing to pay my attendance on the emperor of *Blefuſcu*, a conſiderable perſon at court (to whom I had been very ſerviceable at a time, when he lay under the higheſt diſpleaſure of his imperial majeſty) came to my houſe very privately at night in a cloſe chair, and, without ſending his name, deſired admittance: the chairmen were diſmiſſed; I put the chair, with his lordſhip in it, into my coat-pocket; and, giving orders to a truſty ſervant to ſay I was indiſpoſed and gone to ſleep, I faſtened the door of my houſe, placed the chair on the table according to my uſual cuſtom,

cuſtom, and ſat down by it. After the common ſalutations were over, obſerving his lordſhip's countenance full of concern, and enquiring into the reaſon, he deſired I would hear him with patience in a matter, that highly concerned my honour and my life. His ſpeech was to the following effect, for I took notes of it as ſoon as he left me.

You are to know, ſaid he, that ſeveral committees of council have been lately called in the moſt private manner on your account; and it is but two days ſince his majeſty came to a full reſolution.

You are very ſenſible that *Skyris Bolgolam (galbet*, or high-admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almoſt ever ſince your arrival: his original reaſons I know not; but his hatred is encreaſed ſince your great ſucceſs againſt *Bleſuſcu*, by which his glory, as admiral, is much obſcured. This lord, in conjunction with *Flimnap* the high-treaſurer, whoſe enmity againſt you is notorious on account of his lady, *Limtoc* the general, *Lalcon* the chamberlain, and *Balmuff* the grand juſticiary, have prepared articles of impeachment againſt you for treaſon and other capital crimes.

This preface made me ſo impatient, being conſcious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt: when he entreated me to be ſilent, and thus proceeded.

Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole

proceedings, and a copy of the articles; wherein I venture my head for your ſervice.

Articles of impeachment againſt Quinbus Fleſtrin *the* man-mountain.

ARTICLE I.

Whereas, by a ſtatute made in the reign of his imperial majeſty *Calin Deffar Plune*, it is enacted, that whoever ſhall make water within the precincts of the royal palace, ſhall be liable to the pains and penalties of high treaſon: notwithſtanding the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin* in open breach of the ſaid law, under colour of extinguiſhing the fire kindled in the apartment of his majeſty's moſt dear imperial conſort, did maliciouſly, traiterouſly, and deviliſhly, by diſcharge of his urine put out the ſaid fire kindled in the ſaid apartment, lying and being within the precincts of the ſaid royal palace, againſt the ſtatute in that caſe provided, *etc.* againſt the duty, *etc.*

ARTICLE II.

That the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin* having brought the imperial fleet of *Bleſuſcu* into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his imperial majeſty to ſeize all the other ſhips of the ſaid empire of *Bleſuſcu*, and reduce that empire to a province to be governed by a viceroy from hence, and to deſtroy and put to death not only all the *big-endian exiles*, but likewiſe

likewiſe all the people of that empire, who would not immediately forſake the *big-endian* hereſy: he the ſaid *Fleſtrin*, like a falſe traitor againſt his moſt auſpicious, ſerene, imperial majeſty, did petition to be excuſed from the ſaid ſervice, upon pretence of unwillingneſs to force the conſciences, or deſtroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people [a].

ARTICLE III.

That, whereas certain ambaſſadors arrived from the court of *Bleſuſcu* to ſue for peace in his majeſty's court: he the ſaid *Fleſtrin* did, like a falſe traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the ſaid ambaſſadors, although he knew them to be ſervants to a prince, who was lately an open enemy to his imperial majeſty, and in open war againſt his ſaid majeſty.

ARTICLE IV.

That the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin*, contrary to the duty of a faithful ſubject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of *Bleſuſcu*, for which he hath received only verbal licence from his imperial majeſty; and under colour of the ſaid licence doth falſly and traiterouſly intend to take the ſaid voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the emperor

[a] A lawyer thinks himſelf honeſt if he does the beſt he can for his client, and a ſtateſman if he promotes the intereſt of his country; but the dean here inculcates an higher notion of right and wrong, and obligations to a larger community.

of

of *Blefuſcu*, ſo late an enemy and in open war with his imperial majeſty aforeſaid.

There are ſome other articles, but theſe are the moſt important, of which I have read you an abſtract.

In the ſeveral debates upon this impeachment it muſt be confeſſed that his majeſty gave many marks of his great lenity, often urging the ſervices you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The treaſurer and admiral inſiſted that you ſhould be put to the moſt painful and ignominious death by ſetting fire on your houſe at night, and the general was to attend with twenty thouſand men armed with poiſoned arrows to ſhoot you on the face and hands. Some of your ſervants were to have private orders to ſtrew a poiſonous juice on your ſhirts and ſheets, which would ſoon make you tear your own fleſh, and die in the utmoſt torture. The general came into the ſame opinion; ſo that for a long time there was a majority againſt you: but his majeſty reſolving, if poſſible, to ſpare your life, at laſt brought off the chamberlain.

Upon this incident *Reldreſal* principal ſecretary for private affairs, who always approved himſelf your true friend, was commanded by the emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did: and therein juſtified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that ſtill there was room for mercy, the moſt commendable virtue

in

in a prince, and for which his majeſty was ſo juſtly celebrated. He ſaid, the friendſhip between you and him was ſo well known to the world, that perhaps the moſt honourable board might think him partial: however, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his ſentiments. That if his majeſty, in conſideration of your ſervices, and purſuant to his own merciful diſpoſition, would pleaſe to ſpare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expedient juſtice might in ſome meaſure be ſatisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of thoſe who have the honour to be his counſellors. That the loſs of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily ſtrength, by which you might ſtill be uſeful to his majeſty: that blindneſs is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us; that the fear you had for your eyes, was the greateſt difficulty in bringing over the enemies fleet; and it would be ſufficient for you to ſee by the eyes of the miniſters, ſince the greateſt princes do no more.

This propoſal was received with the utmoſt diſapprobation by the whole board. *Bolgolam* the admiral could not preſerve his temper; but riſing up in fury ſaid, he wondered how the ſecretary durſt preſume to give his opinion for preſerving the life of a traitor: that the ſervices you had performed were, by all true reaſons of ſtate, the great aggravation of your crimes;

crimes; that you, who was able to extinguiſh the fire by diſcharge of urine in her majeſty's apartment (which he mentioned with horror) might at another time raiſe an inundation by the ſame means to drown the whole palace; and the ſame ſtrength, which enabled you to bring over the enemies fleet, might ſerve upon the firſt diſcontent to carry it back: that he had good reaſons to think you were a *big-endian* in your heart; and as treaſon begins in the heart, before it appears in overt-acts, ſo he accuſed you as a traitor on that account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to death.

The treaſurer was of the ſame opinion: he ſhewed to what ſtreights his majeſty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: that the ſecretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was ſo far from being a remedy againſt this evil, that it would probably encreaſe it, as is manifeſt from the common practice of blinding ſome kind of fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: that his ſacred majeſty and the council, who are your judges, were in their own conſciences fully convinced of your guilt, which was a ſufficient argument to condemn you to death without the formal proofs required by the ſtrict letter of the law [a].

But

[a] There is ſomething ſo odious in whatever is wrong, that even thoſe whom it does not ſubject to puniſhment, endeavour to colour it with an appearance of right; but the attempt is always unſucceſsful, and only betrays a conſciouſneſs of deformity

But his imperial majeſty, fully determined againſt capital puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, that ſince the council thought the loſs of your eyes too eaſy a cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the ſecretary, humbly deſiring to be heard again, in anſwer to what the treaſurer had objected concerning the great charge his majeſty was at in maintaining you, ſaid, that his excellency, who had the ſole diſpoſal of the emperor's revenue, might eaſily provide againſt that evil by gradually leſſening your eſtabliſhment; by which, for want of ſufficient food, you will grow weak and faint, and loſe your appetite, and conſume in a few months; neither would the ſtench of your carcaſe be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more than half diminiſhed; and immediately upon your death, five or ſix thouſand of his majeſty's ſubjects might in two or three days cut your fleſh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in diſtant parts to prevent infection, leaving the ſkeleton as a monument of admiration to poſterity.

Thus by the great friendſhip of the ſecretary the whole affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly enjoined, that the project of ſtarving

mity by ſhewing a deſire to hide it. Thus the *Lilliputian* court pretended a right to diſpenſe with the ſtrict letter of the law to put *Gulliver* to death, though by the ſtrict letter of the law only he could be convicted of a crime; the intention of the ſtatute not being to ſuffer the palace rather to be burnt than piſſed upon.

you by degrees ſhould be kept a ſecret, but the ſentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books; none diſſenting except *Bolgolam* the admiral, who, being a creature of the empreſs, was perpetually inſtigated by her majeſty to inſiſt upon your death, ſhe having borne perpetual malice againſt you on account of that infamous and illegal method you took too extinguiſh the fire in her apartment.

In three days, your friend the ſecretary will be directed to come to your houſe, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to ſignify the great lenity and favour of his majeſty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loſs of your eyes, which his majeſty doth not queſtion you will gratefully and humbly ſubmit to; and twenty of his majeſty's ſurgeons will attend in order to ſee the operation well performed by diſcharging very ſharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what meaſures you will take; and, to avoid ſuſpicion, I muſt immediately return in as private a manner as I came.

His lordſhip did ſo, and I remained alone under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a cuſtom introduced by this prince and his miniſtry (very different, as I have been aſſured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution either to gratify the monarch's reſentment, or the malice of a favourite, the emperor

for always made a ſpeech to his whole council, expreſſing his great lenity and tenderneſs, as qualities known and confeſſed by all the world. This ſpeech was immediately publiſhed through the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the people ſo much as thoſe encomiums on his majeſty's mercy; becauſe it was obſerved, that, the more theſe praiſes were enlarged and inſiſted on, the more inhuman was the puniſhment, and the ſufferer more innocent. Yet, as to myſelf, I muſt confeſs, having never been deſigned for a courtier either by my birth or education, I was ſo ill a judge of things, that I could not diſcover the lenity and favour of this ſentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneouſly) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I ſometimes thought of ſtanding my trial; for, although I could not deny the facts alledged in the ſeveral articles, yet I hoped they would admit of ſome extenuation. But having in my life peruſed many ſtate-trials, which I ever obſerved to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durſt not rely on ſo dangerous a deciſion, in ſo critical a juncture, and againſt ſuch powerful enemies. Once I was ſtrongly bent upon reſiſtance; for, while I had liberty, the whole ſtrength of that empire could hardly ſubdue me, and I might eaſily with ſtones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I ſoon rejected that project with horror by remembering the oath I had made to the emperor, the favours I received from him, and the high title of *nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither

had I ſo ſoon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to perſuade myſelf, that his majeſty's preſent ſeverities acquitted me of all paſt obligations.

At laſt I fixed upon a reſolution, for which it is probable I may incur ſome cenſure, and not unjuſtly; for I confeſs I owe the preſerving mine eyes, and conſequently my liberty, to my own great raſhneſs, and want of experience; becauſe, if I had then known the nature of princes and miniſters, which I have ſince obſerved in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals leſs obnoxious than myſelf, I ſhould with great alacrity and readineſs have ſubmitted to ſo eaſy a puniſhment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his imperial majeſty's licence to pay my attendance upon the emperor of *Blefuſcu*, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapſed, to ſend a letter to my friend the ſecretary, ſignifying my reſolution of ſetting out that morning for *Blefuſcu*, purſuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an anſwer, I went to that ſide of the iſland where our fleet lay. I ſeized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I ſtript myſelf, put my cloaths (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the veſſel, and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwimming arrived at the royal port of *Blefuſcu*, where the people had long expected me; they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the ſame name. I held them in my

my hands, till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and desired them to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his majesty's command. I had an answer in about an hour, that his majesty attended by the royal family and great officers of the court was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred yards. The emperor and his train alighted from their horses, the empress and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his majesty's and the empress's hand. I told his majesty that I was come according to my promise, and with the licence of the emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power consistent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the emperor would discover the secret, while I was out of his power; wherein however it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapt up in my coverlet,

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; *and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.*

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curioſity to the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland, I obſerved about half a league off, in the ſea, ſomewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my ſhoes and ſtockings, and, wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real boat, which I ſuppoſed might by ſome tempeſt have been driven from a ſhip: whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and deſired his imperial majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt veſſels he had left after the loſs of his fleet, and three thouſand ſeamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt way to the coaſt, where I firſt diſcovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it ſtill nearer. The ſeamen were all provided with cordage, which I had beforehand twiſted to a ſufficient ſtrength. When the ſhips came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded till I came within an hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to ſwim till I got up to it. The ſeamen threw me the end of the cord, which I faſtened

I faſtened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war: but I found all my labour to little purpoſe; for, being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this neceſſity, I was forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my hands; and the tide favouring me I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt hold up my chin and feel the ground. I reſted two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another ſhove, and ſo on till the ſea was no higher than my arm-pits; and now, the moſt laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were ſtowed in one of the ſhips, and faſtened them firſt to the boat, and then to nine of the veſſels which attended me; the wind being favourable, the ſeamen towed, and I ſhoved till we arrived within forty yards of the ſhore, and, waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, and by the aſſiſtance of two thouſand men, with ropes and engines, I made a ſhift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which coſt me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal port of *Bleſuſcu*, where a mighty concourſe of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the ſight of ſo prodigious a veſſel. I told the emperor, that my good fortune had thrown this boat in

my way to carry me to ſome place, from whence I might return into my native country, and begged his majeſty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart, which, after ſome kind expoſtulations, he was pleaſed to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any expreſs relating to me from our emperor to the court of *Blefuſcu*. But I was afterwards given privately to underſtand, that his imperial majeſty, never imagining I had the leaſt notice of his deſigns, believed I was only gone to *Blefuſcu* in performance of my promiſe, according to the licence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when the ceremony was ended. But he was at laſt in pain at my long abſence; and, after conſulting with the treaſurer and the reſt of that cabal, a perſon of quality was diſpatched with the copy of the articles againſt me. This envoy had inſtructions to repreſent to the monarch of *Blefuſcu* the great lenity of his maſter, who was content to puniſh me no farther than with the loſs of mine eyes; that I had fled from juſtice, and, if I did not return in two hours, I ſhould be deprived of my title of *nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that, in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his maſter expected, that his brother of *Blefuſcu* would give orders to have me ſent back to *Lilliput*,

liput, bound hand and foot, to be puniſhed as a traitor.

The emperor of *Blefuſcu*, having taken three days to conſult, returned an anſwer conſiſting of many civilities and excuſes. He ſaid, that, as for ſending me bound, his brother knew it was impoſſible; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace. That however both their majeſties would ſoon be made eaſy; for I had found a prodigious veſſel on the ſhore, able to carry me on the ſea, which he had given order to fit up with my own aſſiſtance and direction; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from ſo inſupportable an incumbrance.

With this anſwer the envoy returned to *Lilliput*, and the monarch of *Blefuſcu* related to me all that had paſt; offering me at the ſame time (but under the ſtricteſt confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his ſervice; wherein although I believed him ſincere, yet I reſolved never more to put any confidence in princes or miniſters, where I could poſſibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgments for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excuſed. I told him, that ſince fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a veſſel in my way, I was reſolved to venture myſelf in the ocean, rather than be an occaſion of difference between two ſuch mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the emperor

at

at all diſpleaſed; and I diſcovered by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my reſolution, and ſo were moſt of his miniſters.

Theſe conſiderations moved me to haſten my departure ſomewhat ſooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were imployed to make two ſails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their ſtrongeſt linnen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables by twiſting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickeſt and ſtrongeſt of theirs. A great ſtone that I happened to find, after a long ſearch by the ſea-ſhore, ſerved me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greaſing my boat, and other uſes. I was at incredible pains in cutting down ſome of the largeſt timber-trees for oars and maſts, wherein I was however much aſſiſted by his majeſty's ſhip-carpenters, who helped me in ſmoothing them after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I ſent to receive his majeſty's commands, and to take my leave. The emperor and royal family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiſs his hand, which he very graciouſly gave me; ſo did the empreſs, and young princes of the blood. His majeſty preſented me with fifty purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* a piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of

my gloves to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I ſtored the boat with the carcaſes of an hundred oxen, and three hundred ſheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dreſſed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me ſix cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the emperor would by no means permit; and, beſides a diligent ſearch into my pockets, his majeſty engaged my honour not to carry away any of his ſubjects, although with their own conſent and deſire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I ſet ſail on the twenty-fourth day of *September* 1701, at ſix in the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at ſouth-eaſt, at ſix in the evening I deſcried a ſmall iſland about half a league to the north-weſt. I advanced forward, and caſt anchor on the lee-ſide of the iſland, which ſeemed to be uninhabited. I then took ſome refreſhment, and went to my reſt. I ſlept well, and as I conjecture at leaſt ſix hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I eat my breakfaſt before the ſun

ſnn was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I ſteered the ſame courſe, that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compaſs. My intention was to reach, if poſſible, one of thoſe iſlands which I had reaſon to believe lay to the north-eaſt of *Van Diemen*'s land. I diſcovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty-four leagues from *Bleſuſcu*, I deſcried a ſail ſteering to the ſouth-eaſt; my courſe was due eaſt. I hailed her, but could get no anſwer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind ſlackened. I made all the ſail I could, and in half an hour ſhe ſpied me, then hung out her antient, and diſcharged a gun. It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more ſeeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I left in it. The ſhip ſlackened her ſails, and I came up with her between five and ſix in the evening, *September* 26; but my heart leapt within me to ſee her *Engliſh* colours. I put my cows and ſheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of proviſions. The veſſel was an *Engliſh* merchant-man returning from *Japan* by the *north* and *ſouth-ſeas*; the captain Mr. *John Biddel* of *Deptford*, a very civil man, and an excellent ſailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees ſouth, there were about fifty men in the ſhip; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one *Peter Williams*,

liams, who gave me a good character to the captain. This gentleman treated me with kindneſs, and deſired I would let him know what place I came from laſt and whither I was bound; which I did in few words, but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I had underwent had diſturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and ſheep out of my pocket, which, after great aſtoniſhment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then ſhewed him the gold given me by the emperor of *Befuſcu*, together with his majeſty's picture at full length, and ſome other rarities of that country. I gave him two purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* each, and promiſed, when we arrived in *England*, to make him a preſent of a cow and a ſheep big with young.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very proſperous for the moſt part. We arrived in the *Downs* on the 13th of *April* 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my ſheep; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the fleſh. The reſt of my cattle I got ſafe a-ſhore, and ſet them a grazing in a bowling-green at *Greenwich*, where the fineneſs of the graſs made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary: neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me ſome of his beſt biſket, which rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their conſtant food. The

ſhort

ſhort time I continued in *England*, I made a conſiderable profit by ſhewing my cattle to many perſons of quality, and others: and before I began my ſecond voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred pounds. Since my laſt return I find the breed is conſiderably increaſed, eſpecially the ſheep, which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture by the fineneſs of the fleeces.

I ſtayed but two months with my wife and family; for my inſatiable deſire of ſeeing foreign countries would ſuffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good houſe at *Redriff*. My remaining ſtock I carried with me, part in money and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortunes. My eldeſt uncle *John* had left me an eſtate in land, near *Epping*, of about thirty pounds a year; and I had a long leaſe of the *Black Bull* in *Fetter-Lane*, which yielded me as much more: ſo that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the pariſh. My ſon *Johnny*, named ſo after his uncle, was at the grammar ſchool, and a towardly child. My daughter *Betty* (who is now well married, and has children) was then at her needle-work. I took leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with tears on both ſides, and went on board the *Adventure*, a merchant-ſhip of three hundred tons bound for *Surat*, captain *John Nicholas* of *Leverpool* commander. But my account of this voyage muſt be referred to the ſecond part of my travels.

A VOYAGE

A

VOYAGE

TO

BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great ſtorm deſcribed, the long-boat ſent to fetch water, the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants.

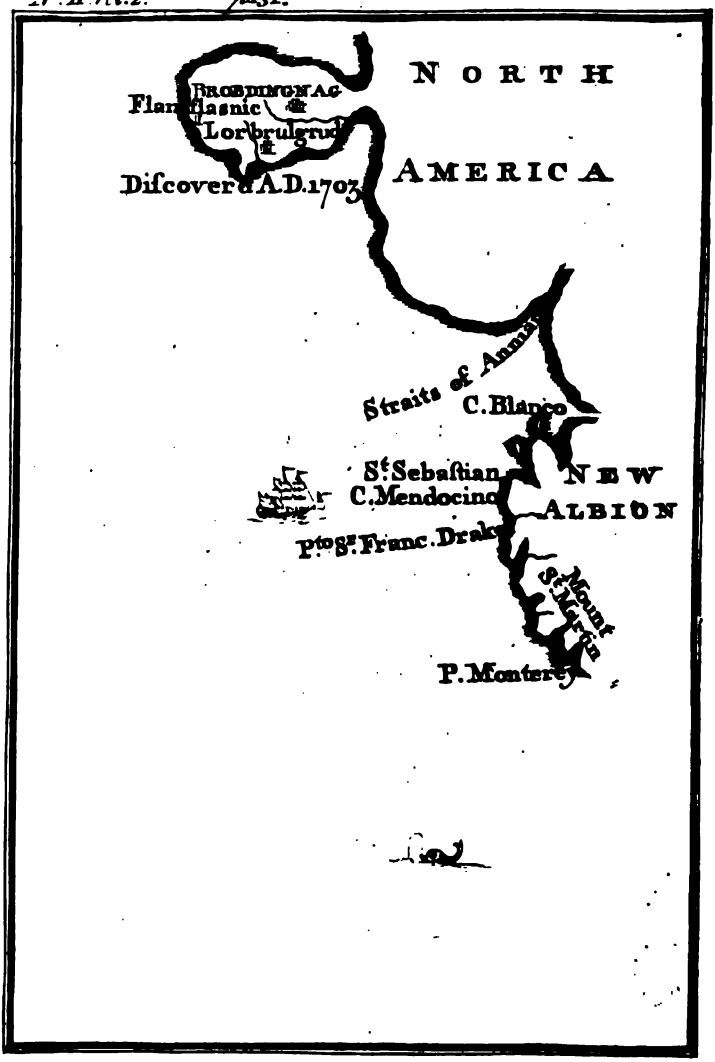
HAVING been condemned by nature and fortune to an active and reſtleſs life, in two months after my return I again left my native country, and took ſhipping in the *Downs* on the 20th day of *June* 1702, in the *Adventure*, captain *John Nicholas* a *Corniſh* man commander, bound for *Surat*. We had a very proſperous gale till we arrived at the *Cape of Good Hope*, where we landed for freſh water, but diſcovering a leak, we unſhipped our goods, and wintered there; for, the captain falling ſick of an ague, we could not leave the *Cape* till the end of *March*. We then ſet ſail, and had a good voyage till we paſſed the *Streights* of *Madagaſcar*; but having got northward of that iſland, and to about five degrees ſouth latitude,

titude, the winds, which in thoſe ſeas are obſerved to blow a conſtant equal gale between the north and weſt, from the beginning of *December* to the beginning of *May*, on the 19th of *April* began to blow with much greater violence, and more weſterly than uſual, continuing ſo for twenty days together, during which time, we were driven a little to the eaſt of the *Molucca* iſlands, and about three degrees northward of the line, as our captain found by an obſervation he took the 2d of *May*, at which time the wind ceaſed, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of thoſe ſeas, bid us all prepare againſt a ſtorm, which accordingly happened the day following: for the ſouthern wind, called the ſouthern *monſoon*, began to ſet in.

Finding it was like to overblow, we took in our ſprit-ſail, and ſtood by to hand the fore-ſail; but, making foul weather, we looked the guns were all faſt, and handed the miſſen. The ſhip lay very broad off, ſo we thought it better ſpooning before the ſea, than trying or hulling. We reeft the fore-ſail and ſet him, and hawled aft the fore-ſheet; the helm was hard a weather. The ſhip wore bravely. We belayed the fore-down-hall; but the ſail was ſplit, and we hawled down the yard, and got the ſail into the ſhip, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce ſtorm; the ſea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawled off upon the lanniard of the whip-

ſtaff,

No. 11 Vol. 2. p. 131.



ſtaff, and helped the man at the helm. We would not get down our top-maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the ſea very well, and we knew that, the top-maſt being aloft, the ſhip was the wholſomer, and made better way through the ſea, ſeeing we had ſea-room. When the ſtorm was over, we ſet fore-ſail and main-ſail, and brought the ſhip to. Then we ſet the miſſen, main-top-ſail, and the fore-top-ſail. Our courſe was *eaſt-north-eaſt*, the wind was at *ſouth-weſt*. We got the ſtar-board tacks a-board, we caſt off our weather braces and lifts; we ſet in the lee-braces, and hawled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and belayed them, and hawled over the miſſen-tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as ſhe would lie.

During this ſtorm, which was followed by a ſtrong wind *weſt-ſouth-weſt*, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the *eaſt*, ſo that the oldeſt ſailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our proviſions held out well, our ſhip was ſtaunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmoſt diſtreſs for water. We thought it beſt to hold on the ſame courſe, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the *north-weſt* parts of great *Tartary*, and into the frozen ſea.

On the 16th day of *June*, 1703, a boy on the top-maſt diſcovered land. On the 17th, we came in full view of a great iſland or con-

tinent (for we knew not whether) on the ſouth-ſide whereof was a ſmall neck of land jutting out into the ſea, and a creek too ſhallow to hold a ſhip of above one hundred tons. We caſt anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain ſent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with veſſels for water, if any could be found. I deſired his leave to go with them, that I might ſee the country, and make what diſcoveries I could. When we came to land, we ſaw no river or ſpring, nor any ſign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the ſhore to find out ſome freſh water near the ſea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other ſide, where I obſerved the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and ſeeing nothing to entertain my curioſity, I returned gently down towards the creek; and the ſea being full in my view, I ſaw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ſhip. I was going to hollow after them, although it had been to little purpoſe, when I obſerved a huge creature walking after them in the ſea, as faſt as he could: he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious ſtrides: but our men had the ſtart of him half a league, and, the ſea thereabouts being full of ſharp-pointed rocks, the monſter was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durſt not ſtay to ſee the iſſue of the adventure; but ran as faſt I could the way I firſt went, and then climbed up a ſteep hill, which gave

gave me ſome proſpect of the country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurpriſed me was the length of the graſs, which, in thoſe grounds that ſeemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty feet high.

I fell into a high road, for ſo I took it to be, though it ſerved to the inhabitants only as a foot-path through a field of barley. Here I walked on for ſome time, but could ſee little on either ſide, it being now near harveſt, and the corn riſing at leaſt forty feet. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty feet high, and the trees ſo loſty that I could make no computation of their altitude. There was a ſtile to paſs from this field into the next. It had four ſteps, and a ſtone to croſs over when you came to the uppermoſt. It was impoſſible for me to climb this ſtile, becauſe every ſtep was ſix feet high, and the upper ſtone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find ſome gap in the hedge, when I diſcovered one of the inhabitants in the next field advancing towards the ſtile, of the ſame ſize with him whom I ſaw in the ſea purſuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary ſpire-ſteeple, and took about ten yards at every ſtride, as near I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with the utmoſt fear and aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide myſelf in the corn, from whence I ſaw him at the top of the ſtile looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a ſpeaking-trumpet; but the noiſe

156909

was ſo high in the air, that at firſt I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon ſeven monſters, like himſelf, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeneſs of ſix ſcythes. Theſe people were not ſo well clad as the firſt, whoſe ſervants or labourers they ſeemed to be: for, upon ſome words he ſpoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the ſtalks of the corn were ſometimes not above a foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ſqueeſe my body betwixt them. However I made a ſhift to go forward, till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it was impoſſible for me to advance a ſtep; for the ſtalks were ſo interwoven that I could not creep thorough, and the beards of the fallen ears ſo ſtrong and pointed, that they pierced through my cloaths into my fleſh. At the ſame time I heard the reapers not above an hundred yards behind me. Being quite diſpirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and deſpair, I lay down between two ridges, and heartily wiſhed I might there end my days. I bemoaned my deſolate widow, and fatherleſs children. I lamented my own folly and wilfulneſs in attempting a ſecond voyage againſt the advice of all my friends and relations, In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of *Lilliput*, whoſe inhabitants looked upon me as the greateſt prodigy that ever appeared

peared in the world: where I was able to draw an imperial fleet in my hand, and perform thoſe other actions which will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that empire, while poſterity ſhall hardly believe them, although atteſted by millions. I reflected what a mortification it muſt prove to me to appear as inconſiderable in this nation, as one ſingle *Lilliputian* would be among us. But this I conceived was to be the leaſt of my misfortunes: for, as human creatures are obſerved to be more ſavage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morſel in the mouth of the firſt among theſe enormous barbarians, that ſhould happen to ſeize me? Undoubtedly philoſophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwiſe than by compariſon. It might have pleaſed fortune to have let the *Lilliputians* find ſome nation, where the people were as diminutive with reſpect to them, as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious race of mortals might be equally overmatched in ſome diſtant part of the world, whereof we have yet no diſcovery.

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with theſe reflections, when one of the reapers, approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next ſtep I ſhould be ſquaſhed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore, when he was again about to move, I ſcreamed as

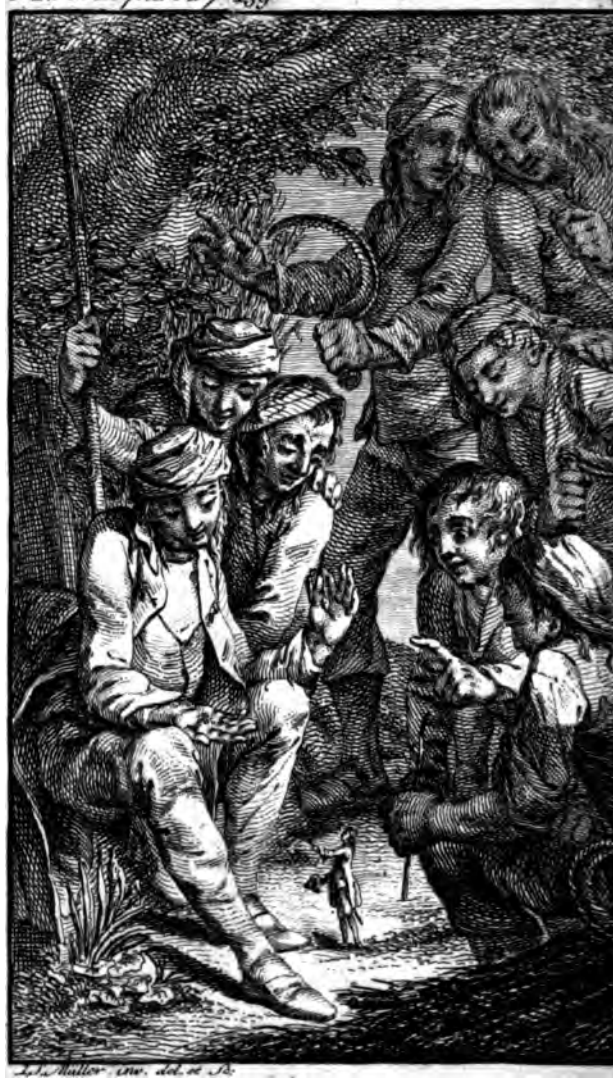
loud as fear could make me. Whereupon the huge creature trod ſhort, and, looking round about under him for ſome time, at laſt eſpied me as I lay on the ground. He conſidered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a ſmall dangerous animal, in ſuch a manner that it ſhall not be able either to ſcratch or to bite him, as I myſelf have ſometimes done with a weaſel in *England*. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my ſhape more perfectly. I gueſſed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me ſo much preſence of mind, that I reſolved not to ſtruggle in the leaſt as he held me in the air above ſixty feet from the ground, although he grievouſly pinched my ſides, for fear I ſhould ſlip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raiſe mine eyes towards the ſun, and place my hands together in a ſupplicating poſture, and to ſpeak ſome words in an humble melancholy tone, ſuitable to the condition I then was in. For I apprehended every moment that he would daſh me againſt the ground, as we uſually do any little hateful animal, which we have a mind to deſtroy [a]. But my good ſtar would have it,

[a] Our inattention to the felicity of ſenſitive beings merely becauſe they are ſmall is here forcibly reproved: many have wantonly cruſhed an inſect, who would ſhudder at cutting the throat of a dog; but it ſhould always be remembered, that the leaſt of theſe

"In mortal ſufferance feels a pang as great
"As when a giant dies."

that

N°12 Vol. 2 part 2 p. 139



J. J. Muller inv. del. et sc.

that he appeared pleaſed with my voice and geſtures, and began to look upon me as a curioſity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not underſtand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and ſhedding tears, and turning my head towards my ſides; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the preſſure of his thumb and finger. He ſeemed to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his maſter, who was a ſubſtantial farmer, and the ſame perſon I had firſt ſeen in the field.

The farmer having (as I ſuppoſe by their talk) received ſuch an account of me as his ſervant could give him, took a piece of a ſmall ſtraw, about the ſize of a walking-ſtaff, and therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat; which it ſeems he thought to be ſome kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aſide to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and aſked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever ſeen in the fields any little creature that reſembled me: he then placed me ſoftly on the ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked ſlowly backwards and forwards to let thoſe people ſee I had no intent to run away. They all ſat down in a circle about me the better to obſerve my motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow to-

wards the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and ſpoke ſeveral words as loud as I could: I took a purſe of gold out of my pocket, and humbly preſented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it cloſe to his eye to ſee what it was, and afterwards turned it ſeveral times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his ſleeve) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a ſign that he ſhould place his hand on the ground. I then took the purſe, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were ſix *ſpaniſh* pieces of four piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller coins. I ſaw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largeſt pieces, and then another, but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a ſign to put them again into my purſe, and the purſe again into my pocket, which, after offering it to him ſeveral times, I thought it beſt to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I muſt be a rational creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the ſound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I anſwered as loud as I could in ſeveral languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me; but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his ſervants to their work, and, taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and ſpread it on his

his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground with the palm upwards, making me a ſign to ſtep into it, as I could eaſily do, for it was not above a foot in thickneſs. I thought it my part to obey, and, for fear of falling, laid myſelf at full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for farther ſecurity, and in this manner carried me home to his houſe. There he called his wife, and ſhewed me to her; but ſhe ſcreamed and ran back, as women in *England* do at the ſight of a toad or a ſpider. However, when ſhe had a while ſeen my behaviour, and how well I obſerved the ſigns her huſband made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a ſervant brought in dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial diſh of meat (fit for the plain condition of an huſbandman) in a diſh of about four and twenty feet diameter. The company were the farmer and his wife, three children and an old grandmother: when they were ſat down, the farmer placed me at ſome diſtance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled ſome bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The miſtreſs ſent her maid for a ſmall dram-cup, which held

held about two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the veſſel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a moſt reſpectful manner drank to her ladyſhip's health, expreſſing the words as loud as I could in *Engliſh*, which made the company laugh ſo heartily, that I was almoſt deafened with the noiſe. This liquor taſted like a ſmall cyder, and was not unpleaſant. Then the maſter made me a ſign to come to his trencher-ſide; but as I walked on the table, being in great ſurprize all the time, as the indulgent reader will eaſily conceive and excuſe, I happened to ſtumble againſt a cruſt, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and obſerving the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and, waving it over my head, made three huzza's, to ſhew I had got no miſchief by my fall. But advancing forwards toward my maſter (as I ſhall henceforth call him) his youngeſt ſon who ſat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me ſo high in the air, that I trembled every limb; but his father ſnatched me from him, and at the ſame time gave him ſuch a box on the left ear, as would have felled an *European* troop of horſe to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a ſpight, and well remembering how miſchievous all children among us naturally are to ſparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy-

puppy-dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy made my maſter to underſtand, as well as I could, that I deſired his ſon might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his ſeat again; whereupon I went to him and kiſſed his hand, which my maſter took, and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

In the midſt of dinner, my miſtreſs's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noiſe behind me like that of a dozen ſtocking-weavers at work; and, turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of that animal, who ſeemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The fierceneſs of this creature's countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; though I ſtood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off; and although my miſtreſs held her faſt, for fear ſhe might give a ſpring, and ſeize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the leaſt notice of me, when my maſter placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying or diſcovering fear before a fierce animal is a certain way to make it purſue or attack you, ſo I reſolved in this dangerous juncture to ſhew no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or ſix times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; where-

whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs apprehenſion concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is uſual in farmers houſes; one of which was a maſtiff equal in bulk to four elephants, and a greyhound ſomewhat taller than the maſtiff, but not ſo large.

When dinner was almoſt done, the nurſe came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately ſpied me, and began a ſquall, that you might have heard from *London-Bridge* to *Chelſea*, after the uſual oratory of infants to get me for a play-thing. The mother out of pure indulgence took me up, and put me towards the child, who preſently ſeized me by the middle, and got my head into his mouth, where I roared ſo loud that the urchin was frighted, and let me drop, and I ſhould infallibly have broke my neck, if the mother had not held her apron under me. The nurſe to quiet her babe made uſe of a rattle, which was a kind of hollow veſſel filled with great ſtones, and faſtened by a cable to the child's waiſt: but all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to apply the laſt remedy by giving it ſuck. I muſt confeſs no object ever diſguſted me ſo much as the ſight of her monſtrous breaſt, which I cannot tell what to compare with, ſo as to give the curious reader an idea of its bulk, ſhape, and colour. It ſtood prominent ſix feet, and could not be leſs than ſixteen in circumference. The nipple was about half

the

the bigneſs of my head, and the hue both of that and the dug ſo varified with ſpots, pimples, and freckles, that nothing could appear more nauſeous: for I had a near ſight of her, ſhe ſitting down the more conveniently to give ſuck, and I ſtanding on the table. This made me reflect upon the fair ſkins of our *Engliſh* ladies, who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own ſize, and their defects not to be ſeen but through a magnifying-glaſs, where we find by experiment, that the ſmootheſt and whiteſt ſkins look rough and coarſe, and ill-coloured.

I remember, when I was at *Lilliput*, the complexions of thoſe diminutive people appeared to me the faireſt in the world; and talking upon this ſubject with a perſon of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he ſaid that my face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view when I took him up in my hand and brought him cloſe, which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking ſight. He ſaid he could diſcover great holes in my ſkin; that the ſtumps of my beard were ten times ſtronger than the briſtles of a boar, and my complexion made up of ſeveral colours altogether diſagreeable: although I muſt beg leave to ſay for myſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my ſex and country, and very little ſun-burnt by all my travels. On the other ſide, diſcourſing of the ladies in that emperor's court, he uſed to tell me, one had

freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a noſe, nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs this reflection was obvious enough; which however I could not forbear, leſt the reader might think thoſe vaſt creatures were actually deformed: for I muſt do them juſtice to ſay, they are a comely race of people; and particularly the features of my maſter's countenance, although he were but a farmer, when I beheld him from the heighth of ſixty feet, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my maſter went out to his labourers, and, as I could diſcover by his voice and geſture, gave his wife a ſtrict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and diſpoſed to ſleep, which my miſtreſs perceiving, ſhe put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarſer than the main-ſail of a man of war.

I ſlept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my ſorrows when I awaked, and found myſelf alone in a vaſt room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My miſtreſs was gone about her houſhold affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. Some natural neceſſities required me to get down; I durſt not preſume to call, and, if I had, it would have been in vain with ſuch a voice as mine, at ſo great a diſtance as from the room where

where I lay to the kitchen where the family kept. While I was under theſe circumſtances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran ſmelling backwards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almoſt to my face, whereupon I roſe in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myſelf. Theſe horrible animals had the boldneſs to attack me on both ſides, and one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly, before he could do me any miſchief. He fell down at my feet, and the other ſeeing the fate of his comrade made his eſcape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the bed to recover my breath, and loſs of ſpirits. Theſe creatures were of the ſize of a large maſtiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce, ſo that, if I had taken off my belt before I went to ſleep, I muſt have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I meaſured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch; but it went againſt my ſtomach to drag the carcaſs off the bed, where it lay ſtill bleeding; I obſerved it had yet ſome life, but, with a ſtrong ſlaſh croſs the neck, I thoroughly diſpatched it.

Soon after my miſtreſs came into the room, who ſeeing me all bloody ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, ſmiling and making other ſigns to ſhew I was not hurt,

hurt, whereat ſhe was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then ſhe ſet me on a table, where I ſhewed her my hanger all bloody, and, wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the ſcabbard. I was preſſed to do more than one thing, which another could not do for me; and therefore endeavoured to make my miſtreſs underſtand that I deſired to be ſet down on the floor; which after ſhe had done, my baſhfulneſs would not ſuffer me to expreſs myſelf farther, than by pointing to the door, and bowing ſeveral times. The good woman, with much difficulty, at laſt perceived what I would be at, and taking me up again in her hand, walked into the garden, where ſhe ſet me down. I went on one ſide about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myſelf between two leaves of ſorrel, and there diſcharged the neceſſities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuſe me for dwelling on theſe and the like particulars, which, however inſignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philoſopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my ſole deſign in preſenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world; wherein I have been chiefly ſtudious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of ſtyle.

ſtyle. But the whole ſcene of this voyage made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on my mind, and is ſo deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumſtance: however, upon a ſtrict review, I blotted out ſeveral paſſages of leſs moment which were in my firſt copy, for fear of being cenſured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without juſtice, accuſed.

CHAP. II.

A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

MY miſtreſs had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and ſkilful in dreſſing her baby. Her mother and ſhe contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me againſt night: the cradle was put into a ſmall drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging ſhelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I ſtayed with thoſe people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was ſo handy, that, after I had once or twice pulled off my cloaths before her, ſhe was able to dreſs and undreſs me, though I never gave her

that trouble, when ſhe would let me do either myſelf. She made me ſeven ſhirts, and ſome other linnen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarſer than ſackcloth; and theſe ſhe conſtantly waſhed for me with her own hands. She was likewiſe my ſchool-miſtreſs to teach me the language: when I pointed to any thing, ſhe told me the name of it in her own tongue, ſo that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of *Grildrig*, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports, what the *Latins* call *nanunculus*, the *Italians homunceletino*, and the *Engliſh mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preſervation in that country: we never parted while I was there; I called her my *Glumdalclitch*, or little nurſe; and ſhould be guilty of great ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wiſh it lay in my power to requite as ſhe deſerves, inſtead of being the innocent, but unhappy inſtrument of her diſgrace, as I have too much reaſon to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my maſter had found a ſtrange animal in the field, about the bigneſs of a *ſplacnuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewiſe imitated in all its actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little language of its own, had already learned ſeveral

ſeveral words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer, who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my maſter, came on a viſit on purpoſe to enquire into the truth of this ſtory. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my maſter's gueſt, aſked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, juſt as my little nurſe had inſtructed me. This man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his ſpectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon ſhining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who diſcovered the cauſe of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miſer; and, to my misfortune, he well deſerved it by the curſed advice he gave my maſter to ſhew me as a ſight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my maſter and his friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy

that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their words. But the next morning *Glumdalclitch*, my little nurſe, told me the whole matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her boſom, and fell a weeping with ſhame and grief. She apprehended ſome miſchief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might ſqueeſe me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I ſhould conceive it to be expoſed for money as a publick ſpectacle to the meaneſt of the people. She ſaid, her *papa* and *mamma* had promiſed that *Grildrig* ſhould be hers, but now ſhe found they meant to ſerve her as they did laſt year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as ſoon as it was fat, ſold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was leſs concerned than my nurſe. I had a ſtrong hope, which never left me, that I ſhould one day recover my liberty; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monſter, I conſidered myſelf to be a perfect ſtranger in the country, and that ſuch a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I ſhould return to *England*; ſince the king of *Great-Britain* himſelf, in my condition, muſt have undergone the ſame diſtreſs.

My maſter, purſuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with

with him his little daughter, my nurſe, upon a pillion behind him. The box was cloſe on every ſide, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The girl had been ſo careful as to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly ſhaken and diſcompoſed in this journey, though it were but of half an hour. For the horſe went about forty feet at every ſtep, and trotted ſo high, that the agitation was equal to the riſing and falling of a ſhip in a great ſtorm, but much more frequent: our journey was ſomewhat farther than from *London* to *St. Alban*'s. My maſter alighted at an inn which he uſed to frequent; and after conſulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making ſome neceſſary preparations, he hired the *grultrud* or crier to give notice through the town of a ſtrange creature to be ſeen at the ſign of the *Green Eagle*, not ſo big as a *ſplacnuck* (an animal in that country very finely ſhaped, about ſix feet long) and in every part of the body reſembling an human creature, could ſpeak ſeveral words, and perform an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largeſt room of the inn, which might be near three hundred feet ſquare. My little nurſe ſtood on a low ſtool cloſe to the table to take care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My maſter, to avoid a croud, would ſuffer only thirty people at a time to ſee me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded; ſhe aſked me

ter *Glumdalclitch* ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a box tied about her waiſt. The girl had lined it on all ſides with the ſofteſt cloth ſhe could get, well quilted underneath, furniſhed it with her baby's bed, provided me with linnen and other neceſſaries, and made every thing as convenient as ſhe could. We had no other company but a boy of the houſe, who rode after us with the luggage.

My maſter's deſign was to ſhew me in all the towns by the way, and to ſtep out of the road for fifty or an hundred miles, to any village, or perſon of quality's houſe, where he might expect cuſtom. We made eaſy journies of not above ſeven or eightſcore miles a day: for *Glumdalclitch*, on purpoſe to ſpare me, complained ſhe was tired with the trotting of the horſe. She often took me out of my box at my own deſire to give me air, and ſhew me the country, but always held me faſt by a leading-ſtring. We paſſed over five or ſix rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the *Nile*, or the *Ganges*; and there was hardly a rivulet ſo ſmall as the *Thames* at *London-Bridge*. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was ſhewn in eighteen large towns, beſides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of *October*, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language *Lorbrulgrud*, or *Pride of the Univerſe*. My maſter took a lodging in the principal ſtreet of the city, not far from the royal palace, and put out

ut bills in the uſual form, containing an ex-
ct deſcription of my perſon and parts. He
ired a large room between three and four
undred feet wide. He provided a table ſix-
y feet in diameter, upon which I was to act
y part, and palliſadoed it round three feet
om the edge, and as many high, to pre-
ent my falling over. I was ſhewn ten times
day, to the wonder and ſatisfaction of all
eople. I could now ſpeak the language to-
rably well, and perfectly underſtood every
ord that was ſpoken to me. Beſides, I had
arned their alphabet, and could make a ſhift
explain a ſentence here and there; for
Humdalclitch had been my inſtructor while we
ere at home, and at leiſure hours during
ur journey. She carried a little book in her
ocket, not much larger than a *Sanſon*'s *At-*
s; it was a common treatiſe for the uſe of
oung girls, giving a ſhort account of their
eligion; out of this ſhe taught me my letters,
nd interpreted the words.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author ſent for to court. The queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the king. He diſputes with his majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the queen's dwarf.

THE frequent labours I underwent every day, made in few weeks a very conſiderable change in my health: the more my maſter got by me, the more inſatiable he grew. I had quite loſt my ſtomach, and was almoſt reduced to a ſkeleton. The farmer obſerved it, and concluding I muſt ſoon die, reſolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reaſoning and reſolving with himſelf, a *ſardral*, or gentleman-uſher, came from court, commanding my maſter to carry me immediately thither for the diverſion of the queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to ſee me, and reported ſtrange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good ſenſe. Her majeſty, and thoſe who attended her, were beyond meaſure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kiſſing her imperial foot; but this gracious princeſs held out her little finger towards me (after I was ſet on a table) which I

embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmoſt reſpect to my lip. She made me ſome general queſtions about my country, and my travels, which I anſwered as diſtinctly, and in as few words as I could. She aſked, whether I would be content to live at court. I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly anſwered that I was my maſter's ſlave; but if I were at my own diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to devote my life to her majeſty's ſervice. She then aſked my maſter, whether he were willing to ſell me at a good price. He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thouſand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the ſpot, each piece being about the bigneſs of eight hundred moydores; but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and *Europe*, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly ſo great a ſum as a thouſand guineas would be in *England*. I then ſaid to the queen, ſince I was now her majeſty's moſt humble creature and vaſſal, I muſt beg the favour, that *Glumdalclitch*, who had always tended me with ſo much care and kindneſs, and underſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted into her ſervice, and continue to be my nurſe and inſtructor. Her majeſty agreed to my petition, and eaſily got the farmer's conſent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court, and the poor girl herſelf was not able to hide her joy: my late maſter withdrew, bidding me farewel,

farewel, and ſaying he had left me in a good ſervice; to which I replied not a word, only making him a ſlight bow.

The queen obſerved my coldneſs, and, when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, aſked me the reaſon. I made bold to tell her majeſty, that I owed no other obligation to my late maſter, than his not daſhing out the brains of a poor harmleſs creature found by chance in his field; which obligation was amply recompenſed by the gain he had made in ſhewing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now ſold me for. That the life I had ſince led, was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my ſtrength. That my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day, and that, if my maſter had not thought my life in danger, her majeſty would not have got ſo cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of ſo great and good an empreſs, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her ſubjects, the phœnix of the creation; ſo, I hoped my late maſter's apprehenſions would appear to be groundleſs, for I already found my ſpirits to revive by the influence of her moſt auguſt preſence.

This was the ſum of my ſpeech, delivered with great improprieties and heſitation; the latter part was altogether framed in the ſtyle peculiar to that people, whereof I learned ſome phraſes

phraſes from *Glumdalclitch*, while ſhe was carrying me to court.

The queen, giving great allowance for my defectiveneſs in ſpeaking, was however ſurpriſed at ſo much wit and good ſenſe in ſo diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the king, who was then retired to his cabinet. His majeſty, a prince of much gravity and auſtere countenance, not well obſerving my ſhape at firſt view, aſked the queen after a cold manner, how long it was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *ſplacnuck*; for ſuch it ſeems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breaſt in her majeſty's right hand. But this princeſs, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, ſet me gently on my feet upon the ſcrutore, and commanded me to give his majeſty an account of myſelf, which I did in a very few words; and *Glumdalclitch*, who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure I ſhould be out of her ſight, being admitted, confirmed all that had paſſed from my arrival at her father's houſe.

The king, although he be as learned a perſon as any in his dominions, had been educated in the ſtudy of philoſophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he obſerved my ſhape exactly, and ſaw me walk erect, before I began to ſpeak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by ſome ingenious artiſt. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational,

rational, he could not conceal his aſtoniſhment. He was by no means ſatisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a ſtory concerted between *Glumdalclitch* and her father, who had taught me a ſett of words to make me ſell at a better price. Upon this imagination he put ſeveral other queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational anſwers, no otherwiſe defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with ſome ruſtic phraſes which I had learned at the farmer's houſe, and did not ſuit the polite ſtyle of a court.

His majeſty ſent for three great ſcholars, who were then in their weekly waiting according to the cuſtom in that country. Theſe gentlemen, after they had a while examined my ſhape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed, that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature, becauſe I was not framed with a capacity of preſerving my life either by ſwiftneſs, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They obſerved by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet moſt quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field-mice with ſome others too nimble, they could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport myſelf, unleſs I fed upon ſnails and other inſects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could

ould not poſſibly do *. One of theſe virtuoſi emed to think that I might be an embryo, abortive birth. But this opinion was re-ected by the other two, who obſerved my mbs to be perfect and finiſhed, and that I had ved ſeveral years, as it was manifeſt from my eard, the ſtumps whereof they plainly diſ-overed through a magnifying-glaſs. They ould not allow me to be a dwarf, becauſe ıy littleneſs was beyond all degrees of compa-ſon; for the queen's favourite dwarf, the nalleſt ever known in that kingdom, was near hirty feet high. After much debate they oncluded unanimouſly, that I was only *relplum calcath*, which is interpreted literally *luſus naturæ*; a determination exactly agreeable to the nodern philoſophy of *Europe*, whoſe profeſſors iſdaining the old evaſion of *occult cauſes*, whereby the followers of *Ariſtotle* endeavoured n vain to diſguiſe their ignorance, have in-ented this wonderful ſolution of all difficul-ies, to the unſpeakable advancement of hu-nan knowledge.

After this deciſive concluſion I entreated to e heard a word or two. I applied myſelf to he king, and aſſured his majeſty that I came rom a country, which abounded with ſeveral nillions of both ſexes and of my own ſtature;

* By this reaſoning the author probably intended to ridicule the pride of thoſe philoſophers, who have thought fit to arraign the wiſdom of providence in the creation and government of the world; whoſe cavils are ſpecious, like thoſe of the *Brobdingnagian* ſages, only in proportion to the ignorance of thoſe to whom they are propoſed.

where

where the animals, trees, and houſes were all in proportion, and where by conſequence I might be as able to defend myſelf, and to find ſuſtenance, as any of his majeſty's ſubjects could do here; which I took for a full anſwer to thoſe gentlemens arguments. To this they only replied with a ſmile of contempt, ſaying, that the farmer had inſtructed me very well in my leſſon [a]. The king, who had a much better underſtanding, diſmiſſing his learned men, ſent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town: having therefore firſt examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his majeſty began to think that what we told him might poſſibly be true. He deſired the queen to order that a particular care ſhould be taken of me, and was of opinion, that *Glumdalclitch* ſhould ſtill continue in her office of tending me, becauſe he obſerved we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; ſhe had a ſort of governeſs appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dreſs her, and two other ſervants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herſelf. The queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might ſerve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that *Glumdalclitch* and I ſhould agree upon. This

[a] This ſatire is levelled againſt all, who reject thoſe facts for which they cannot perfectly account, notwithſtanding the abſurdity of rejecting the teſtimony by which they are ſupported.

man

man was a moſt ingenious artiſt, and according to my directions in three weeks finiſhed for me a wooden chamber of ſixteen feet ſquare, and twelve high, with ſaſh-windows, a door, and two cloſets, like a *London* bedchamber. The board, that made the cieling, was to be lifted up and down by two hinges to put in a bed ready furniſhed by her majeſty's upholſterer, which *Glumdalclitch* took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curioſities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a ſubſtance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all ſides, as well as the floor and the cieling, to prevent any accident from the careleſneſs of thoſe who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I deſired a lock for my door to prevent rats and mice from coming in: the ſmith, after ſeveral attempts, made the ſmalleſt that ever was ſeen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's houſe in *England*. I made a ſhift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing *Glumdalclitch* might loſe it. The queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt ſilks that could be gotten to make me cloaths, not much thicker than an *Engliſh* blanket, very cumberſome, till I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the faſhion of the kingdom, partly reſembling the

perſian, and partly the *chineſe*, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The queen became ſo fond of my company, that ſhe could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the ſame at which her majeſty eat, juſt at her left elbow, and a chair to ſit on. *Glumdalclitch* ſtood on a ſtool on the floor near my table to aſſiſt and take care of me. I had an entire ſett of ſilver diſhes and plates and other neceſſaries, which in proportion to thoſe of the queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen in a *London* toy-ſhop, for the furniture of a baby-houſe: theſe my little nurſe kept in her pocket in a ſilver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herſelf. No perſon dined with the queen but the two princeſſes royal, the elder ſixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her majeſty uſed to put a bit of meat upon one of my diſhes, out of which I carved for myſelf; and her diverſion was to ſee me eat in miniature. For the queen (who had indeed but a weak ſtomach) took up, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen *Engliſh* farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for ſome time a very nauſeous ſight[a]. She would craunch the wing of a lark,

[a] Among other dreadful and diſguſting images which cuſtom has rendered familiar are thoſe which ariſe from eating animal food: he who has ever turned with abhorrence from the ſkeleton of a beaſt which has been picked whole by birds or vermin, muſt confeſs that habit only could have enabled him to endure the ſight of the mangled bones and fleſh of a dead carcaſs which every day cover his table: and he who reflects on the

ark, bones and all, between her teeth, al-
ough it were nine times as large as that of a
ll grown turkey; and put a bit of bread in
r mouth, as big as two twelve-penny loaves.
ıe drank out of a golden cup, above a hog-
ead at a draught. Her knives were twice as
ıg as a ſcythe, ſet ſtrait upon the handle.
he ſpoons, forks, and other inſtruments, were
in the ſame proportion. I remember when
lumdalclitch carried me out of curioſity to ſee
me of the tables at court, where ten or a
ızen of theſe enormous knives and forks
ere lifted up together, I thought I had never
l then beheld ſo terrible a ſight.

It is the cuſtom, that every *Wedneſday*
vhich, as I have before obſerved, is their
bbath) the king and queen, with the royal
ſue of both ſexes, dine together in the a-
ırtment of his majeſty, to whom I was now
ːcome a great favourite; and at theſe times
y little chair and table were placed at his left
ınd before one of the ſalt-cellars. This
ince took a pleaſure in converſing with me,
ıquiring into the manners, religion, laws,
ɔvernment, and learning of *Europe*; wherein
gave him the beſt account I was able. His
ɔprehenſion was ſo clear, and his judgment
ɔ exact, that he made very wiſe reflections

e number of lives that have
ːen ſacrificed to ſuſtain his
vn, ſhould enquire by what
e account has been ballanced,
ıd whether his life is become
ɔportionably of more value by
the exerciſe of virtue and piety,
by the ſuperior happineſs which
he has communicated to reaſon-
able beings, and by the glory
which his intellect has aſcribed
to God.

and obſervations upon all I ſaid. But I confeſs, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by ſea and land, of our ſchiſms in religion, and parties in the ſtate; the prejudices of his education prevailed ſo far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and ſtroaking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, aſked me, whether I was a *whig* or *tory*? Then turning to his firſt miniſter, who waited behind him with a white ſtaff near as tall as the main-maſt of the *royal-ſovereign*, he obſerved how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by ſuch diminutive inſects as I: and yet, ſays he, I dare engage, theſe creatures have their titles and diſtinction of honour, they contrive little neſts and burrows, that they call houſes and cities; they make a figure in dreſs and equipage; they love, they fight, they diſpute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went ſeveral times with indignation to hear our noble country, the miſtreſs of arts and arms, the ſcourge of *France*, the arbitreſs of *Europe*, the ſeat of virtue, piety, honour and truth, the pride and envy of the world, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

But as I was not in a condition to reſent injuries, ſo upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For, after having been accuſtomed ſeveral months to the ſight and converſe of this people, and obſerved every

ry object upon which I caſt mine eyes to
of proportionable magnitude, the horror I
. at firſt conceived from their bulk and aſ-
t, was ſo far worn off, that if I had then
eld a company of *Engliſh* lords and ladies
:heir finery, and birth-day cloaths, acting
ir ſeveral parts in the moſt courtly manner
ſtrutting, and bowing, and prating; to ſay
truth, I ſhould have been ſtrongly tempted
.augh as much at them, as the king and
grandees did at me. Neither indeed could
ırbear ſmiling at myſelf, when the queen
l to place me upon her hand towards a
cing-glaſs, by which both our perſons ap-
red before me in full view together; and
:e could nothing be more ridiculous than
compariſon: ſo that I really began to ima-
: myſelf dwindled many degrees below my
ıl ſize.

Nothing angered and mortified me ſo much
he queen's dwarf, who being of the loweſt
ure that was ever in that country (for I
ly think he was not full thirty feet high)
ame ſo inſolent at ſeeing a creature ſo much
eath him, that he would always affect to
gger and look big as he paſſed by me in the
en's anti-chamber, while I was ſtanding on
ıe table talking with the lords or ladies of
court, and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart
'd or two upon my littleneſs; againſt which
ould only revenge myſelf by calling him
ther, challenging him to wreſtle, and ſuch
ırtees as are uſual in the mouths of *court*

pages. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cubb was ſo nettled with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that, raiſing himſelf upon the frame of her majeſty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was ſitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large ſilver bowl of cream, and then ran away as faſt as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good ſwimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for *Glumdalclitch* in that inſtant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in ſuch a fright, that ſhe wanted preſence of mind to aſſiſt me. But my little nurſe ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had ſwallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however I received no other damage than the loſs of a ſuit of cloaths, which was utterly ſpoiled. The dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and as a farther puniſhment forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me; neither was he ever reſtored to favour: for ſoon after the queen beſtowed him on a lady of high quality, ſo that I ſaw him no more, to my very great ſatisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity ſuch a malicious urchin might have carried his reſentment.

He had before ſerved me a ſcurvy trick, which ſet the queen a laughing, although at the ſame time ſhe was heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her majeſty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate,

plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the diſh erect, as it ſtood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while *Glumdalclitch* was gone to the ſide-board, mounted the ſtool that ſhe ſtood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and ſqueeſing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone above my waiſt, where I ſtuck for ſome time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes ſeldom get their meat hot, my legs were not ſcalded, only my ſtockings and breeches in a ſad condition. The dwarf, at my entreaty, had no other puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the queen upon account of my fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to aſk me, whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myſelf? The occaſion was this: the kingdom is much peſtered with flies in ſummer; and theſe odious inſects, each of them as big as a *Dunſtable* lark, hardly gave me any reſt while I ſat at dinner with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathſome excrement or ſpawn behind, which to me was very viſible, though not to the natives of that country, whoſe large optics were not ſo acute as mine in viewing ſmaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my noſe or forehead,

where they ſtung me to the quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous matter, which, our naturaliſts tell us, enables thoſe creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a cieling. I had much ado to defend myſelf againſt theſe deteſtable animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of theſe inſects in his hand, as ſchool-boys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my noſe, on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when *Glumdalclitch* had ſet me in my box upon a window, as ſhe uſually did in fair days to give me air (for I durſt not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in *England)* after I had lifted up one of my ſaſhes, and ſat down at my table to eat a piece of ſweet cake for my breakfaſt, above twenty waſps, allured by the ſmell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them ſeized my cake, and carried it piecemeal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt terror of their ſtings. However, I had the courage to riſe and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and

and I preſently ſhut my window. Theſe inſects were as large as partridges; I took out their ſtings, found them an inch and a half long, and as ſharp as needles. I carefully preſerved them all, and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other curioſities in ſeveral parts of *Europe*, upon my return to *England*, I gave three of them to *Greſham College*, and kept the fourth for myſelf.

CHAP. IV.

The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The king's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed.

I Now intend to give the reader a ſhort deſcription of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thouſand miles round *Lorbrulgrud*, the metropolis. For the queen, whom I always attended, never went farther when ſhe accompanied the king in his progreſſes, and there ſtaid till his majeſty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this prince's dominions reacheth about ſix thouſand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude, that our geographers of *Europe* are in a great error, by ſuppoſing nothing but ſea between *Japan* and *California*; for it was ever my opinion, that there muſt be a balance of earth to counterpoiſe the great con-

continent of *Tartary*; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts by joining this vaſt tract of land to the north-weſt parts of *America*, wherein I ſhall be ready to lend them my aſſiſtance.

The kingdom is a peninſula, terminated to the north-eaſt by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impaſſable by reaſon of the volcanoes upon the tops: neither do the moſt learned know what ſort of mortals inhabit beyond thoſe mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other ſides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one ſea-port in the whole kingdom, and thoſe parts of the coaſts into which the rivers iſſue are ſo full of pointed rocks, and the ſea generally ſo rough, that there is no venturing with the ſmalleſt of their boats; ſo that theſe people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the reſt of the world. But the large rivers are full of veſſels, and abound with excellent fiſh, for they ſeldom get any from the ſea, becauſe the ſea-fiſh are of the ſame ſize with thoſe in *Europe*, and conſequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifeſt, that nature in the production of plants and animals of ſo extraordinary a bulk is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reaſons to be determined by philoſophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be daſhed againſt the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. Theſe whales I have known ſo large that

that a man could hardly carry one upon his ſhoulders; and ſometimes for curioſity they are brought in hampers to *Lorbrulgrud*: I ſaw one of them in a diſh at the king's table, which paſſed for a rarity, but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I think indeed the bigneſs diſguſted him, although I have ſeen one ſomewhat larger in *Greenland*.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To ſatisfy my curious reader, it may be ſufficient to deſcribe *Lorbrulgrud*. This city ſtands upon almoſt two equal parts on each ſide the river that paſſes through. It contains above eighty thouſand houſes, and about ſix hundred thouſand inhabitants. It is in length three *glomglungs* (which make about fifty-four *Engliſh* miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I meaſured it myſelf in the royal map made by the king's order, which was laid on the ground on purpoſe for me, and extended an hundred feet; I paced the diameter and circumference ſeveral times bare foot, and, computing by the ſcale, meaſured it pretty exactly.

The king's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of building about ſeven miles round: the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to *Glumdalclitch* and me, wherein her governeſs frequently took her out to ſee the town, or go among the ſhops;

ſhops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl at my own deſire would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houſes and the people, as we paſſed along the ſtreets. I reckoned our coach to be about a ſquare of *Weſtminſter-hall*, but not altogether ſo high: however, I cannot be very exact. One day the governeſs ordered our coachman to ſtop at ſeveral ſhops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crouded to the ſides of the coach, and gave me the moſt horrible ſpectacles that ever an *european* eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breaſt, ſwelled to a monſtrous ſize, full of holes, in two or three of which I could have eaſily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck larger than five wool-packs, and another with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. But the moſt hateful ſight of all was the lice crawling on their cloaths. I could ſee diſtinctly the limbs of theſe vermin with my naked eye, much better than thoſe of an *european* louſe through a microſcope, and their ſnouts with which they rooted like ſwine. They were the firſt I had ever beheld, and I ſhould have been curious enough to diſſect one of them, if I had had proper inſtruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the ſhip) although indeed the ſight was ſo nauſeous, that it perfectly turned my ſtomach.

Beſide

Beſide the large box in which I was uſually carried, the queen ordered a ſmaller one to be made for me of about twelve feet ſquare and ten high for the convenience of travelling, becauſe the other was ſomewhat too large for *Glumdalclitch*'s lap, and cumberſome in the coach; it was made by the ſame artiſt, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling cloſet was an exact ſquare with a window in the middle of three of the ſquares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outſide to prevent accidents in long journies. On the fourth ſide, which had no window, two ſtrong ſtaples were fixed, through which the perſon that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horſeback, put a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waiſt. This was always the office of ſome grave truſty ſervant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the king and queen in their progreſſes, or were diſpoſed to ſee the gardens, or pay a viſit to ſome great lady or miniſter of ſtate in the court, when *Glumdalclitch* happened to be out of order: for I ſoon began to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt officers, I ſuppoſe more upon account of their majeſty's favour than any merit of my own. In journies, when I was weary of the coach, a ſervant on horſeback would buckle on my box, and place it upon a cuſhion before him; and there I had a full proſpect of the country on three ſides from my three windows. I had in this cloſet a field-bed and a hammock hung

from the cieling, two chairs and a table, neatly ſcrewed to the floor, to prevent being toſſed about by the agitation of the horſe or the coach. And having been long uſed to ſea-voyages, thoſe motions, although ſometimes very violent, did not much diſcompoſe me.

Whenever I had a mind to ſee the town, it was always in my travelling-cloſet, which *Glumdalclitch* held in her lap in a kind of open ſedan, after the faſhion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the queen's livery. The people, who had often heard of me, were very curious to croud about the ſedan, and the girl was complaiſant enough to make the bearers ſtop, and to take me in her hand that I might be more conveniently ſeen.

I was very deſirous to ſee the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the higheſt in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurſe carried me thither, but I may truly ſay I came back diſappointed; for the heighth is not above three thouſand feet, reckoning from the ground to the higheſt pinnacle top; which, allowing for the difference between the ſize of thoſe people and us in *Europe*, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to *Saliſbury* ſteeple. But, not to detract from a nation to which during my life I ſhall acknowledge myſelf extremely obliged, it muſt be allowed that whatever this famous tower wants in heighth is amply made up

up in beauty and ſtrength. For the walls are near an hundred feet thick, built of hewn ſtone, whereof each is about forty feet ſquare, and adorned on all ſides with ſtatues of gods and emperors cut in marble larger than the life, placed in their ſeveral niches. I meaſured a little finger which had fallen down from one of theſe ſtatues, and lay unperceived among ſome rubbiſh, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. *Glumdalclitch* wrapped it up in her handkerchief; and carried it home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age uſually are.

The king's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about ſix hundred feet high. The great oven is not ſo wide by ten paces as the cupola at St. *Paul*'s: for I meaſured the latter on purpoſe after my return. But if I ſhould deſcribe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the ſpits, with many other particulars, perhaps I ſhould be hardly believed; at leaſt a ſevere critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often ſuſpected to do. To avoid which cenſure, I fear I have run too much into the other extream; and that if this treatiſe ſhould happen to be tranſlated into the language of *Brobdingnag*, (which is the general name of that kingdom) and tranſmitted thither, the king and his people would have reaſon to complain, that I had done

done them an injury by a falſe and diminutive repreſentation.

His majeſty ſeldom keeps above ſix hundred horſes in his ſtables: they are generally from fifty-four to ſixty feet high. But, when he goes abroad on ſolemn days, he is attended for ſtate by a militia guard of five hundred horſe, which indeed I thought was the moſt ſplendid ſight that could be ever beheld, till I ſaw part of his army in battalia, whereof I ſhall find another occaſion to ſpeak.

CHAP. V.

Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation.

I Should have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleneſs had not expoſed me to ſeveral ridiculous and troubleſome accidents: ſome of which I ſhall venture to relate. *Glumdalclitch* often carried me into the gardens of the court in my ſmaller box, and would ſometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, or ſet me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the queen, he followed us one day into thoſe gardens, and my nurſe having ſet me down, he and I being cloſe together, near ſome dwarf apple-trees, I muſt need ſhew my wit by a ſilly alluſion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the

the malicious rogue watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, ſhook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a *Briſtol* barrel, came tumbling about my ears; one of them hit me on the back as I chanced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my deſire, becauſe I had given the provocation.

Another day *Glumdalclitch* left me on a ſmooth graſs-plot to divert myſelf, while ſhe walked at ſome diſtance with her governeſs. In the mean time there ſuddenly fell ſuch a violent ſhower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it ſtruck to the ground: and when I was down, the hail-ſtones gave me ſuch cruel bangs all over the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls; however, I made a ſhift to creep on all four, and ſhelter myſelf by lying flat on my face on the lee-ſide of a border of lemon-thyme, but ſo bruiſed from head to foot, that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, becauſe nature in that country obſerving the ſame proportion through all her operations, a hail-ſtone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in *Europe*, which I can aſſert upon experience, having been ſo curious to weigh and meaſure them.

But a more dangerous accident happened to to me in the ſame garden, when my little nurſe believing ſhe had put me in a ſecure place,

which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governeſs, and ſome ladies of her acquaintance. While ſhe was abſent, and out of hearing, a ſmall white ſpaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay: the dog, following the ſcent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth ran ſtrait to his maſter, wagging his tail, and ſet me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been ſo well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the leaſt hurt, or even tearing my cloaths. But the poor gardener who knew me well, and had a great kindneſs for me, was in a terrible fright: he gently took me up in both his hands, and aſked me how I did; but I was ſo amazed and out of breath, that I could not ſpeak a word. In a few minutes I came to myſelf, and he carried me ſafe to my little nurſe, who by this time had returned to the place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor anſwer when ſhe called: ſhe ſeverely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was huſhed up, and never known at court; for the girl was afraid of the queen's anger, and truly, as to myſelf, I thought it would not be for my reputation that ſuch a ſtory ſhould go about.

This

This accident abſolutely determined *Glumdalclitch* never to truſt me abroad for the future out of her ſight. I had been long afraid of this reſolution, and therefore concealed from her ſome little unlucky adventures that happened in thoſe times when I was left by myſelf. Once a kite, hovering over the garden, made a ſtoop at me, and if I had not reſolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick eſpalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time walking to the top of a freſh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole, through which that animal had caſt up the earth, and coined ſome lye, not worth remembering, to excuſe myſelf for ſpoiling my cloaths. I likewiſe broke my right ſhin againſt the ſhell of a ſnail, which I happened to ſtumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor *England*.

I cannot tell, whether I were more pleaſed or mortified to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary walks, that the ſmaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard's diſtance, looking for worms and other food with as much indifference and ſecurity, as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thruſh had the confidence to ſnatch out of my hand, with his bill, a piece of cake that *Glumdalclitch* had juſt given me for my breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring to pick my fingers, which I durſt not venture within their reach;

and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for worms or ſnails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my ſtrength ſo luckily at a linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurſe. However, the bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many boxes with his wings on both ſides of my head and body, though I held him at arms length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was ſoon relieved by one of our ſervants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner by the queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an *England* ſwan.

The maids of honour often invited *Glumdalclitch* to their apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on purpoſe to have the pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often ſtrip me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their boſoms; wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe, to ſay the truth, a very offenſive ſmell came from their ſkins; which I do not mention, or intend, to the diſadvantage of thoſe excellent ladies, for whom I have all manner of reſpect; but I conceive that my ſenſe was more acute in proportion to my littleneſs, and that thoſe illuſtrious perſons were no more diſagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, than

than people of the ſame quality are with us in *England*. And, after all, I found their natural ſmell was much more ſupportable, than when they uſed perfumes, under which I immediately ſwooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate friend of mine in *Lilliput* took the freedom in a warm day, when I had uſed a good deal of exerciſe, to complain of a ſtrong ſmell about me, although I am as little faulty that way, as moſt of my ſex: but I ſuppoſe his faculty of ſmelling was as nice with regard to me, as mine was to that of this people. Upon this point I cannot forbear doing juſtice to the queen my miſtreſs, and *Glumdalclitch* my nurſe, whoſe perſons were as ſweet as thoſe of any lady in *England*.

That which gave me moſt uneaſineſs among theſe maids of honour (when my nurſe carried me to viſit them) was to ſee them uſe me without any manner of ceremony, like a creature who had no ſort of conſequence: for they would ſtrip themſelves to the ſkin, and put put on their ſmocks in my preſence, while I was placed on their toylet, directly before their naked bodies, which I am ſure to me was very far from being a tempting ſight, or from giving me any other emotions, than thoſe of horror and diſguſt. Their ſkins appeared ſo coarſe and uneven, ſo variouſly coloured, when I ſaw them near, with a mole here and there as broad as a trencher, and hairs hanging from it thicker than packthreads, to ſay nothing farther concerning the

reſt of their perſons. Neither did they at all ſcruple, while I was by, to diſcharge what they had drank, to the quantity of at leaſt two hogſheads in a veſſel that held above three tuns. The handſomeſt amongſt theſe maids of honour, a pleaſant frolicſome girl of ſixteen, would ſometimes ſet me aſtride upon one of her nipples, with many other tricks, wherein the reader will excuſe me for not being over particular. But I was ſo much diſpleaſed, that I entreated *Glumdalclitch* to contrive ſome excuſe for not ſeeing that young lady any more.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurſe's governeſs, came and preſſed them both to ſee an execution. It was of a man, who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. *Glumdalclitch* was prevailed on to be of the company, very much againſt her inclination, for ſhe was naturally tender-hearted: and as for myſelf, although I abhorred ſuch kind of ſpectacles, yet my curioſity tempted me to ſee ſomething, that I thought muſt be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a ſcaffold erected for that purpoſe, and his head cut off at one blow with a ſword of about forty feet long. The veins and arteries ſpouted up ſuch a prodigious quantity of blood, and ſo high in the air, that the great *Jett d'eau* at *Verſailles* was not equal for the time it laſted; and the head, when it fell on the ſcaffold floor, gave ſuch a bounce as made me ſtart, although I were at leaſt half an *engliſh* mile diſtant.

The

The queen, who often uſed to hear me talk of my ſea-voyages, and took all occaſions to divert me when I was melancholy, aſked me whether I underſtood how to handle a ſail or an oar, and whether a little exerciſe of rowing might not be convenient for my health? I anſwered, that I underſtood both very well: for although my proper employment had been to be ſurgeon or doctor to the ſhip, yet often upon a pinch I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not ſee how this could be done in their country, where the ſmalleſt wherry was equal to a firſt-rate man of war among us, and ſuch a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her majeſty ſaid, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner ſhould make it, and ſhe would provide a place for me to ſail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my inſtructions in ten days finiſhed a pleaſure-boat, with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight *europeans*. When it was finiſhed, the queen was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her lap to the king, who ordered it to be put in a ciſtern full of water with me in it by way of trial; where I could not manage my two ſculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor along the wall in an outer

room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water, when it began to grow ſtale; and two ſervants could eaſily fill it in half an hour. Here I often uſed to row for my own diverſion, as well as that of the queen and her ladies, who thought themſelves well entertained with my ſkill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my ſail, and then my buſineſs was only to ſteer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and, when they were weary, ſome of their pages would blow my ſail forward with their breath, while I ſhewed my art by ſteering ſtarboard or larboard, as I pleaſed. When I had done, *Glumdalclitch* always carried back my boat into her cloſet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exerciſe I once met an accident, which had like to have coſt me my life: for, one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governeſs, who attended *Glumdalclitch*, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me in the boat, but I happened to ſlip through her fingers, and ſhould infallibly have fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if, by the luckieſt chance in the world, I had not been ſtopped by a corking-pin that ſtuck in the good gentlewoman's ſtomacher; the head of the pin paſſed between my ſhirt and the waiſtband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the middle in the air, till *Glumdalclitch* ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the ſervants, whoſe office it was to fill my trough every third day

with freſh water, was ſo careleſs to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then ſeeing a reſting-place climbed up, and made it lean ſo much on one ſide, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and clothes with its odious ſlime. The largeneſs of its features made it appear the moſt deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I deſired *Glumdalclitch* to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my ſculls, and at laſt forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greateſt danger I ever underwent in that kingdom, was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. *Glumdalclitch* had locked me up in her cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon buſineſs, or a viſit. The weather being very warm, the cloſet-window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I uſually lived, becauſe of its largeneſs and conveniency. As I ſat quietly meditating at my table, I heard ſomething bounce in at the cloſet-window, and ſkip about from one ſide to the other: whereat although I were much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not ſtirring from my ſeat; and then I ſaw this frolicſome animal friſking and leaping up and down,

down, till at laſt he came to my box, which he ſeemed to view with great pleaſure and curioſity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room, or box, but the monkey looking in at every ſide put me into ſuch a fright, that I wanted preſence of mind to conceal myſelf under the bed, as I might eaſily have done. After ſome time ſpent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at laſt eſpied me, and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when ſhe plays with a mouſe, although I often ſhifted place to avoid him, he at length ſeized the lappet of my coat (which, being made of that country ſilk, was very thick and ſtrong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and held me as a nurſe does a child ſhe is going to ſuckle, juſt as I have ſeen the ſame ſort of creature do with a kitten in *Europe*: and when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueeſed me ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I have good reaſon to believe, that he took me for a young one of his own ſpecies, by his often ſtroaking my face very gently with his other paw. In theſe diverſions he was interrupted by a noiſe at the cloſet-door, as if ſome body were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped up to the window, at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard *Glumdalclitch* give a ſhriek

a ſhriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almoſt diſtracted: that quarter of the palace was all in an uproar; the ſervants ran for ladders; the monkey was ſeen by hundreds in the court, ſitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his fore-paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth ſome victuals he had ſqueeſed out of the bag on one ſide of his chaps, and patting me when I would not eat; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ought to be blamed, for without queſtion the ſight was ridiculous enough to every body but myſelf. Some of the people threw up ſtones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my brains had been daſhed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by ſeveral men, which the monkey obſerving, and finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed; not being able to make ſpeed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tyle, and made his eſcape. Here I ſat for ſome time, five hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eves: but an honeſt lad, one of my nurſe's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches-pocket brought me down ſafe.

I was

I was almoſt choaked with the filthy ſtuff the monkey had crammed down my throat; but my dear little nurſe picked it out of my mouth with a ſmall needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was ſo weak, and bruiſed in the ſides with the ſqueezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The king, queen, and all the court, ſent every day to enquire after my health, and her majeſty made me ſeveral viſits during my ſickneſs. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no ſuch animal ſhould be kept about the palace.

When I attended the king after my recovery to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleaſed to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He aſked me, what my thoughts and ſpeculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the freſh air on the roof had ſharpened my ſtomach. He deſired to know, what I would have done upon ſuch an occaſion in my own country. I told his majeſty, that in *Europe* we had no monkies, except ſuch as were brought for curioſities from other places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they preſumed to attack me. And as for that monſtrous animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make uſe of my hanger (looking

(looking fiercely, and clapping my hand upon the hilt, as I ſpoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I ſhould have given him ſuch a wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more haſte than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a perſon who was jealous leſt his courage ſhould be called in queſtion. However, my ſpeech produced nothing elſe beſides a loud laughter, which all the reſpect due to his majeſty from thoſe about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect, how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour to do himſelf honour among thoſe, who are out of all degree of equality or compariſon with him. And yet I have ſeen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in *England* ſince my return, where a little contemptible varlet, without the leaſt title to birth, perſon, wit, or common ſenſe, ſhall preſume to look with importance, and put himſelf upon a foot with the greateſt perſons of the kingdom.

I was every day furniſhing the court with ſome ridiculous ſtory; and *Glumdalclitch*, although ſhe loved me to exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the queen, whenever I committed any folly that ſhe thought would be diverting to her majeſty. The girl, who had been out of order, was carried by her governeſs to take the air about an hour's diſtance, or thirty miles from town. They alighted out of the coach near a ſmall foot-

path

path in a field, and *Glumdalclitch* ſetting down my travelling-box, I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path, and I muſt need try my activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumped ſhort, and found myſelf juſt in the middle up to my knees. I waded through with ſome difficulty, and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my nurſe confined me to my box, till we returned home; where the queen was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the footmen ſpread it about the court; ſo that all the mirth for ſome days was at my expence.

CHAP. VI[a].

Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the king and queen. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The king enquires into the ſtate of England, *which the author relates to him. The king's obſervations thereon.*

I Uſed to attend the king's levee once or twice a week, and had often ſeen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at firſt very terrible

[a] In this chapter he gives an account of the political ſtate of *Europe*. ORRERY.

This is a miſtake of the noble commentator, for *Gulliver* has here given a political account of no country but *England*: it is however a miſtake to which any commentator would have been liable, who had read little more than the titles or contents of the chapters, into which

terrible to behold: for the razor was almoſt twice as long as an ordinary ſcythe. His majeſty, according to the cuſtom of the country, was only ſhaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me ſome of the ſuds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the ſtrongeſt ſtumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making ſeveral holes in it at equal diſtance with as ſmall a needle as I could get from *Glumdalclitch*. I fixed in the ſtumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and ſloping them with my knife towards the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a ſeaſonable ſupply, my own being ſo much broken in the teeth, that it was almoſt uſeleſs: neither did I know any artiſt in that country ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amuſement, wherein I ſpent many of my leiſure hours. I deſired the queen's woman to ſave for me the combings of her majeſty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity, and conſulting with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobbs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round thoſe parts where I deſigned the backs and ſeats;

which this work is divided; for the word *Europe* has in ſome *Engliſh*, and all the *Iriſh*, editions been printed in the title of this chapter inſtead of *England*.

through

through theſe holes I wove the ſtrongeſt hairs I could pick out, juſt after the manner of cane-chairs in *England*. When they were finiſhed, I made a preſent of them to her majeſty, who kept them in her cabinet, and uſed to ſhew them for curioſities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The queen would have had me ſit upon one of theſe chairs, but I abſolutely refuſed to obey her, proteſting I would rather die a thouſand deaths than place a diſhonourable part of my body on thoſe precious hairs, that once adorned her majeſty's head. Of theſe hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewiſe made a neat little purſe about five feet long, with her majeſty's name decyphered in gold letters, which I gave to *Glamdalclitch* by the queen's conſent. To ſay the truth, it was more for ſhew than uſe, being not of ſtrength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore ſhe kept nothing in it but ſome little toys that girls are fond of.

The king, who delighted in muſic, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was ſometimes carried, and ſet in my box on a table to hear them: but the noiſe was ſo great, that I could hardly diſtinguiſh the tunes. I am confident, that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and ſounding together juſt at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the place where the performers ſat, as far as I could, then to ſhut the doors and windows of it, and

and draw the window-curtains; after which I found their muſic not diſagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the ſpinet. *Glumdalclitch* kept one in her chamber, and a maſter attended twice a week to teach her: I called it a ſpinet, becauſe it ſomewhat reſembled that inſtrument, and was played upon in the ſame manner. A fancy came into my head, that I would entertain the king and queen with an *Engliſh* tune upon this inſtrument. But this appeared extremely difficult: for the ſpinet was near ſixty feet long, each key being almoſt a foot wide, ſo that with my arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, and to preſs them down required a good ſmart ſtroak with my fiſt, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpoſe. The method I contrived was this: I prepared two round ſticks about the bigneſs of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker ends with a piece of a mouſe's ſkin, that by rapping on them, I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the ſound. Before the ſpinet a bench was placed about four feet below the keys, and I was put upon the bench. I ran ſideling upon it that way and this, as faſt as I could, banging the proper keys with my two ſticks, and made a ſhift to play a jigg to the great ſatisfaction of both their majeſties: but it was the moſt violent exerciſe I ever underwent, and yet I could not ſtrike above ſixteen

keys, nor conſequently play the baſs and treble together, as other artiſts do; which was a great diſadvantage to my performance.

The king, who, as I before obſerved, was a prince of excellent underſtanding, would frequently order that I ſhould be brought in my box, and ſet upon the table in his cloſet: he would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and ſit down within three yards diſtance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almoſt to a level with his face. In this manner I had ſeveral converſations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his majeſty, that the contempt he diſcovered towards *Europe*, and the reſt of the world, did not ſeem anſwerable to thoſe excellent qualities of mind, that he was maſter of: that reaſon did not extend itſelf with the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we obſerved in our country, that the talleſt perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it: that among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more induſtry, art, and ſagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that, as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his majeſty ſome ſignal ſervice. The king heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He deſired I would give him as exact an account of the government of *England*, as I poſſibly could; becauſe, as fond as princes commonly are of their own cuſtoms (for ſo he conjectured of other

other monarchs by my former diſcourſes) he ſhould be glad to hear of any thing that might deſerve imitation.

Imagine with thyſelf, courteous reader, how often I then wiſhed for the tongue of *Demoſthenes* or *Cicero*, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praiſe of my own dear native country in a ſtyle equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my diſcourſe by informing his majeſty, that our dominions conſiſted of two iſlands, which compoſed three mighty kingdoms under one ſovereign, beſides our plantations in *America*. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our ſoil, and the temperature of our climate. I then ſpoke at large upon the conſtitution of an *Engliſh* parliament, partly made up of an illuſtrious body called the houſe of peers, perſons of the nobleſt blood, and of the moſt antient and ample patrimonies. I deſcribed that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms to qualify them for being counſellors both to the king and kingdom; to have a ſhare in the legiſlature; to be members of the higheſt court of judicature, from whence there could be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That theſe were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their moſt renowned anceſtors, whoſe honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their poſte-

rity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy perſons as part of that aſſembly under the title of biſhops, whoſe peculiar buſineſs it is to take care of religion, and of thoſe who inſtruct the people therein. Theſe were ſearched and ſought out through the whole nation, by the prince and his wiſeſt counſellors among ſuch of the prieſthood, as were moſt deſervedly diſtinguiſhed by the ſanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition, who were indeed the ſpiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the parliament conſiſted of an aſſembly called the houſe of commons, who were all principal gentlemen, *freely* picked and culled out by the people themſelves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to repreſent the wiſdom of the whole nation. And that theſe two bodies made up the moſt auguſt aſſembly in *Europe*, to whom in conjunction with the prince the whole legiſlature is committed.

I then deſcended to the courts of juſtice, over which the judges, thoſe venerable ſages and interpreters of the law, preſided for determining the diſputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the puniſhment of vice, and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treaſury, the valour and atchievements of our forces by ſea and land. I computed the number of our people, by reckoning how many millions there might

might be of each religious ſect, or political party among us. I did not omit even our ſports and paſtimes, or any other particular, which I thought might redound to the honour of my country. And I finiſhed all with a brief hiſtorical account of affairs and events in *England* for about an hundred years paſt.

This converſation was not ended under five audiences, each of ſeveral hours; and the king heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I ſpoke, as well as memorandums of what queſtions he intended to aſk me.

When I had put an end to theſe long diſcourſes, his majeſty in a ſixth audience conſulting his notes propoſed many doubts, queries and objections upon every article. He aſked what methods were uſed to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of buſineſs they commonly ſpent the firſt and teachable part of their lives. What courſe was taken to ſupply that aſſembly when any noble family became extinct. What qualifications were neceſſary in thoſe, who are to be created new lords: whether the humour of the prince, a ſum of money to a court lady or a prime miniſter, or a deſign of ſtrengthening a party oppoſite to the public intereſt, ever happened to be motives in thoſe advancements. What ſhare of knowledge theſe lords had in the laws of their country, and how they came by it, ſo as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-ſubjects in

the laſt reſort. Whether they were always ſo free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe or ſome other ſiniſter view could have no place among them. Whether thoſe holy lords I ſpoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the ſanctity of their lives; had never been compliers with the times while they were common prieſts, or ſlaviſh proſtitute chaplains to ſome nobleman, whoſe opinions they continued ſervilely to follow after they were admitted into that aſſembly.

He then deſired to know, what arts were practiſed in electing thoſe whom I called commoners: whether a ſtranger with a ſtrong purſe might not influence the vulgar voters to chuſe him before their own landlord, or the moſt conſiderable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to paſs, that people were ſo violently bent upon getting into this aſſembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expence, often to the ruin of their families, without any ſalary or penſion; becauſe this appeared ſuch an exalted ſtrain of virtue and public ſpirit, that his majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibly not be always ſincere: and he deſired to know, whether ſuch zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themſelves for the charges and trouble they were at, by ſacrificing the public good to the deſigns of a weak and vicious prince in conjunction with a corrupted miniſtry. He multiplied his queſtions, and ſifted me thoroughly upon

upon every part of this head, propoſing numberleſs enquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I ſaid in relation to our courts of juſtice, his majeſty deſired to be ſatisfied in ſeveral points: and this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almoſt ruined by a long ſuit in chancery, which was decreed for me with coſts. He aſked what time was uſually ſpent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expence. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in cauſes manifeſtly known to be unjuſt, vexatious, or oppreſſive. Whether party in religion or politics were obſerved to be of any weight in the ſcale of juſtice. Whether thoſe pleading orators were perſons educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local cuſtoms. Whether they or their judges had any part in penning thoſe laws, which they aſſumed the liberty of interpreting and gloſſing upon at their pleaſure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and againſt the ſame cauſe, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower ſenate.

He fell next upon the management of our treaſury; and ſaid, he thought my memory had failed me, becauſe I computed our taxes

at about five or ſix millions a year, and, when I came to mention the iſſues, he found they ſometimes amounted to more than double; for the notes he had taken were very particular in this point, becauſe he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be uſeful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was ſtill at a loſs how a kingdom could run out of its eſtate like a private perſon. He aſked me, who were our creditors; and where we found money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and expenſive wars; that certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals muſt needs be richer than our kings. He aſked what buſineſs we had out of our own iſlands, unleſs upon the ſcore of trade or treaty, or to defend the coaſts with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary ſtanding army in the midſt of peace, and among a free people. He ſaid, if we were governed by our own conſent in the perſons of our repreſentatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we were to fight; and would hear my opinion, whether a private man's houſe might not better be defended by himſelf, his children, and family, than by half a dozen raſcals picked up at a venture in the ſtreets for ſmall wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he was pleaſed to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our people by a computation drawn from the ſeveral ſects among us in religion and politics. He ſaid, he knew no reaſon why thoſe, who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the firſt, ſo it was weakneſs not to enforce the ſecond: for a man may be allowed to keep poiſons in his cloſet, but not to vend them about for cordials.

He obſerved, that among the diverſions of our nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming: he deſired to know at what age this entertainment was uſually taken up, and when it was laid down; how much of their time it employed: whether it ever went ſo high as to affect their fortunes: whether mean vicious people by their dexterity in that art might not arrive at great riches, and ſometimes keep our very nobles in dependance, as well as habituate them to vile companions, wholly take them from the improvement of their minds, and force them by the loſſes they received to learn and practiſe that infamous dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical account I gave him of our affairs during the laſt century, proteſting it was only a heap of conſpiracies, rebellions, murders, maſſacres, revolutions, baniſhments, the very worſt effects

that avarice, faction, hypocriſy, perfidiouſneſs, cruelty, rage, madneſs, hatred, envy, luſt, malice, and ambition could produce.

His majeſty in another audience was at the pains to recapitulate the ſum of all I had ſpoken; compared the queſtions he made with the anſwers I had given; then taking me into his hands, and ſtroaking me gently, delivered himſelf in theſe words, which I ſhall never forget, nor the manner he ſpoke them in: My little friend *Grildrig*, you have made a moſt admirable panegyric upon your country; you have clearly proved, that ignorance, idleneſs, and vice are the proper ingredients for qualifying a legiſlator; that laws are beſt explained, interpreted, and applied by thoſe whoſe intereſt and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I obſerve among you ſome lines of an inſtitution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but theſe half eraſed, and the reſt wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have ſaid, how any one perfection is required toward the procurement of any one ſtation among you; much leſs, that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that prieſts are advanced for their piety or learning, ſoldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, ſenators for the love of their country, or counſellors for their wiſdom. As for yourſelf, continued the king, who have ſpent the greateſt part of your life in travelling, I am well diſpoſed to hope you may hitherto have eſcaped many

many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the anſwers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the moſt pernicious race of little odious vermin, that nature ever ſuffered to crawl upon the ſurface of the earth.

CHAP. VII.

The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the king, which is rejected. The king's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and militdry affairs, and parties in the ſtate.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my ſtory. It was in vain to diſcover my reſentments, which were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to reſt with patience, while my noble and beloved country was ſo injuriouſly treated. I am as heartily ſorry as any of my readers can poſſibly be, that ſuch an occaſion was given: but this prince happened to be ſo curious and inquiſitive upon every particular, that it could not conſiſt either with gratitude or good manners to refuſe giving him what ſatisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to ſay in my own vindication, That I artfully eluded many of his queſtions, and gave to every

every point a more favourable turn by many degrees than the ſtrictneſs of truth would allow. For I have always borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which *Dionyſius Halicarnaſſenſis* with ſo much juſtice recommends to an hiſtorian: I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the moſt advantageous light. This was my ſincere endeavour in thoſe many diſcourſes I had with that monarch, although it unfortunately failed of ſucceſs.

But great allowances ſhould be given to a king, who lives wholly ſecluded from the reſt of the world, and muſt therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and cuſtoms that moſt prevail in other nations: the want of which knowledge will ever produce many *prejudices*, and a certain *narrowneſs of thinking*, from which we and the politer countries of *Europe* are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if ſo remote a prince's notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a ſtandard for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further to ſhew the miſerable effects of a *confined education*, I ſhall here inſert a paſſage which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myſelf farther into his majeſty's favour, I told him of an invention diſcovered between three and four hundred years ago to make a certain powder, into an heap of which the ſmalleſt ſpark of fire falling would kindle the whole

whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noiſe and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of braſs or iron, according to its bigneſs, would drive a ball of iron or lead with ſuch violence and ſpeed, as nothing was able to ſuſtain its force. That the largeſt balls thus diſcharged would not only deſtroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the ſtrongeſt walls to the ground, ſink down ſhips, with a thouſand men in each, to the bottom of the ſea; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut through maſts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waſte before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and diſcharged them by an engine into ſome city we were beſieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houſes to pieces, burſt and throw ſplinters on every ſide, daſhing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I underſtood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make thoſe tubes of a ſize proportionable to all other things in his majeſty's kingdom, and the largeſt need not be above an hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the ſtrongeſt town in his dominions in a few hours, or deſtroy the whole metropolis,

metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute commands. This I humbly offered to his majeſty, as a ſmall tribute of acknowledgment in return of ſo many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The king was ſtruck with horror at the deſcription I had given of thoſe terrible engines, and the propoſal I had made. He was amazed, how ſo impotent and groveling an inſect as I (theſe were his expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman ideas, and in ſo familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the ſcenes of blood and deſolation, which I had painted as the common effects of thoſe deſtructive machines, whereof he ſaid ſome evil genius, enemy to mankind, muſt have been the firſt contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that although few things delighted him ſo much as new diſcoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather loſe half his kingdom, than be privy to ſuch a ſecret, which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A ſtrange effect of *narrow principles* and *ſhort views!* that a prince poſſeſſed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and eſteem; of ſtrong parts, great wiſdom, and profound learning, endowed with admirable talents for government, and almoſt adored by his ſubjects, ſhould from a *nice unneceſſary ſcruple*, whereof in *Europe* we can have no conception, let ſlip an opportunity put into his hands, that would have

have made him abſolute maſter of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people. Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent king, whoſe character I am ſenſible will on this account be very much leſſened in the opinion of an *Engliſh* reader: but I take this defect among them to have riſen from their ignorance, by not having hitherto reduced politics into a ſcience, as the more acute wits of *Europe* have done. For I remember very well in a diſcourſe one day with the king, when I happened to ſay there were ſeveral thouſand books among us written upon the *art of government*, it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abominate and deſpiſe all *myſtery*, *refinement*, and *intrigue*, either in a prince or a miniſter. He could not tell what I meant by *ſecrets of ſtate*, where an enemy, or ſome rival nation, were not in the caſe. He confined the knowledge of governing within very *narrow bounds*, to common ſenſe and reaſon, to juſtice and lenity, to the ſpeedy determination of civil and criminal cauſes; with ſome other obvious topics, which are not worth conſidering. And he gave it for his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of corn, or two blades of graſs, to grow upon a ſpot of ground where only one grew before, would deſerve better of mankind, and do more eſſential ſervice to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together.

The

The learning of this people is very defective, conſiſting only in morality, hiſtory, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they muſt be allowed to excel. But the laſt of theſe is wholly applied to what may be uſeful in life, to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts; ſo that among us it would be little eſteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abſtractions, and tranſcendentals, I could never drive the leaſt conception into their heads.

No law of that country muſt exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which conſiſts only in two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expreſſed in the moſt plain and ſimple terms, wherein thoſe people are not mercurial enough to diſcover above one interpretation: and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the deciſion of civil cauſes, or proceedings againſt criminals, their precedents are ſo few, that they have little reaſon to boaſt of any extraordinary ſkill in either.

They have had the art of printing, as well as the *chineſe*, time out of mind: but their libraries are not very large; for that of the king, which is reckoned the largeſt, doth not amount to above a thouſand volumes placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleaſed. The queen's joiner had contrived in one of *Glumdalclitch*'s rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty feet high, formed like

like a ſtanding ladder, the ſteps were each fifty feet long: it was indeed a moveable pair of ſtairs, the loweſt end placed at ten feet diſtance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning againſt the wall: I firſt mounted to the upper ſtep of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and ſo walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then deſcending gradually till I came to the bottom: after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the ſame manner, and ſo turned over the leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a paſte-board, and in the largeſt folios not above eighteen or twenty feet long.

Their ſtyle is clear, maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary words, or uſing various expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their books, eſpecially thoſe in hiſtory and morality. Among the reſt, I was much diverted with a little old treatiſe, which always lay in *Glumdalclitch*'s bed-chamber, and belonged to her governeſs, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakneſs of human kind, and is in little eſteem, except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to ſee what an author

of that country could ſay upon ſuch a ſubject. This writer went through all the uſual topics of *european* moraliſts, ſhewing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpleſs an animal was man in his own nature; how unable to defend himſelf from inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beaſts: how much he was excelled by one creature in ſtrength, by another in ſpeed, by a third in foreſight, by a fourth in induſtry. He added, that nature was degenerated in theſe latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only ſmall abortive births, in compariſon of thoſe in antient times. He ſaid, it was very reaſonable to think, not only that the ſpecies of men were originally much larger, but alſo that there muſt have been giants in former ages; which, as it is aſſerted by hiſtory and tradition, ſo it hath been confirmed by huge bones and ſkulls caſually dug up in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of man in our days. He argued, that the very laws of nature abſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the beginning of a ſize more large and robuſt, not ſo liable to deſtruction from every little accident of a tile falling from an houſe, or a ſtone caſt from the hand of a boy, or being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reaſoning, the author drew ſeveral moral applications uſeful in the conduct of life, but needleſs here to repeat. For my own part, I could not avoid reflecting how univerſally this talent was ſpread, of drawing

lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of diſcontent and repining, from the quarrels we raiſe with nature. And I believe, upon a ſtrict enquiry thoſe quarrels might be ſhewn as ill-grounded among us, as they are among that people *.

As to their military affairs, they boaſt that the king's army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy-ſix thouſand foot, and thirty-two thouſand horſe: if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradeſmen in the ſeveral cities, and farmers in the country, whoſe commanders are only the nobility and gentry without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exerciſes, and under very good diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great merit; for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, choſen after the manner of *Venice* by *ballot*?

I have often ſeen the militia of *Lorbrulgrud* drawn out to exerciſe in a great field near the the city of twenty miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty-five thouſand foot, and ſix thouſand horſe; but it was impoſſible for me to compute their number, conſidering the ſpace of ground they took up. A cavalier, mount-

* The author's zeal to juſtify providence has before been remarked; and theſe quarrels with nature, or in other words with God, could not have been more forcibly reproved than by ſhewing, that the complaints upon which they are founded would be equally ſpecious among beings of ſuch aſtoniſhing ſuperiority of ſtature and ſtrength.

ed on a large ſteed, might be about ninety feet high. I have ſeen this whole body of horſe, upon a word of command, draw their ſwords at once, and brandiſh them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurpriſing, and ſo aſtoniſhing! it looked as if ten thouſand flaſhes of lightning were darting at the ſame time from every quarter of the ſky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whoſe dominions there is no acceſs from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military diſcipline. But I was ſoon informed both by converſation and reading their hiſtories: for in the courſe of many ages they have been troubled with the ſame diſeaſe to which the whole race of mankind is ſubject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the king for abſolute dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been ſometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occaſioned civil wars, the laſt whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grandfather in a general compoſition; and the militia, then ſettled with common conſent, hath been ever ſince kept in the ſtricteſt duty.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The king and queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England.

I Had always a ſtrong impulſe, that I ſhould ſome time recover my liberty, though it was impoſſible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the leaſt hope of ſucceeding. The ſhip in which I ſailed was the firſt ever known to be driven within ſight of that coaſt, and the king had given ſtrict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it ſhould be taken aſhore, and with all its crew and paſſengers brought in a tumbril to *Lorbrulgrud*. He was ſtrongly bent to get me a woman of my own ſize, by whom I might propagate the breed: but I think I ſhould rather have died, than undergone the diſgrace of leaving a poſterity to be kept in cages like tame canary birds, and perhaps in time ſold about the kingdom to perſons of quality for curioſities. I was indeed treated with much kindneſs: I was the favourite of a great king and queen, and the delight of the whole court; but it was upon ſuch a foot, as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget thoſe domeſtic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converſe upon even terms, and walk a-

bout the ſtreets and fields, without being afraid of being trod to death like a frog, or a young puppy. But my deliverance came ſooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common: the whole ſtory and circumſtances of which I ſhall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; and about the beginning of the third *Glumdalclitch* and I attended the king and queen in a progreſs to the *ſouth* coaſt of the kingdom. I was carried as uſual in my travelling-box, which, as I have already deſcribed, was a very convenient cloſet of twelve feet wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed by ſilken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts, when a ſervant carried me before him on horſeback, as I ſometimes deſired, and would often ſleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my cloſet, not directly over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot ſquare, to give me air in hot weather, as I ſlept; which hole I ſhut at pleaſure with a board, that drew backwards and forwards through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the king thought proper to paſs a few days at a palace he hath near *Flanflaſnic*, a city within eighteen *Engliſh* miles of the ſea-ſide. *Glumdalclitch* and I were much fatigued: I had gotten a ſmall cold, but the poor girl was ſo ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to ſee the ocean, which muſt be the only

ſcene

ſcene of my eſcape, if ever it ſhould happen. I pretended to be worſe than I really was, and deſired leave to take the freſh air of the ſea with a page, whom I was very fond of, and who had ſometimes been truſted with me. I ſhall never forget with what unwillingneſs *Glumdalclitch* conſented, nor the ſtrict charge ſhe gave the page to be careful of me, burſting at the ſame time into a flood of tears, as if ſhe had ſome foreboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box about half an hour's walk from the palace towards the rocks on the ſea-ſhore. I ordered him to ſet me down, and lifting up one of my ſaſhes caſt many a wiſtful melancholy look towards the ſea. I found myſelf not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy ſhut the window cloſe down to keep out the cold. I ſoon fell aſleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I ſlept the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds eggs, having before obſerved him from my window ſearching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be that as it will, I found myſelf ſuddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring, which was faſtened at the top of my box for the convenience of carriage. I felt my box raiſed very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious ſpeed. The firſt jolt had like to have ſhaken me out of my hammock, but af-

terwards the motion was eaſy enough. I called out ſeveral times, as loud as I could raiſe my voice, but all to no purpoſe. I looked towards my windows, and could ſee nothing but the clouds and ſky. I heard a noiſe juſt over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woful condition I was in, that ſome eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak with an intent to let it fall on a rock like a tortoiſe in a ſhell, and then pick out my body, and devour it: for the ſagacity and ſmell of this bird enabled him to diſcover his quarry at a great diſtance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I obſerved the noiſe and flutter of wings to encreaſe very faſt, and my box was toſſed up and down like a ſign in a windy day. I heard ſeveral bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for ſuch I am certain it muſt have been that held the ring of my box in his beak) and then all on a ſudden felt myſelf falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with ſuch incredible ſwiftneſs that I almoſt loſt my breath. My fall was ſtopped by a terrible ſquaſh, that ſounded louder to my ears than the cataract of *Niagara*[a]; after which I was quite

[a] *Niagara* is a ſettlement of the *French* in *North-America*, and the cataract is produced by the fall of a conflux of water (formed of the four vaſt lakes of *Canada*) from a rocky precipice, the perpendicular height of which is one hundred and thirty-ſeven feet; and it is ſaid to have been heard fifteen leagues.

in

in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to riſe ſo high that I could ſee light from the tops of the windows. I now perceived I was fallen into the ſea. My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for ſtrength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five feet deep in water. I did then, and do now ſuppoſe, that the eagle which flew away with my box was purſued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he defended himſelf againſt the reſt, who hoped to ſhare in the prey. The plates of iron faſtened at the bottom of the box (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt) preſerved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the ſurface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved; and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a ſaſh, which kept my cloſet ſo tight that very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having firſt ventured to draw back the ſlip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpoſe to let in air, for want of which I found myſelf almoſt ſtifled.

How often did I then wiſh myſelf with my dear *Glumdalclitch*, from whom one ſingle hour had ſo far divided me! And I may ſay with truth, that in the midſt of my own misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor nurſe, the grief ſhe would ſuffer for my loſs, the diſpleaſure of the queen, and the ruin of her fortune.

fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and diſtreſs than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to ſee my box daſhed to pieces, or at leaſt overſet by the firſt violent blaſt or riſing wave. A breach in one ſingle pane of glaſs would have been immediate death: nor could any thing have preſerved the windows but the ſtrong lattice-wires placed on the outſide againſt accidents in travelling. I ſaw the water ooze in at ſeveral crannies, although the leaks were not conſiderable, and I endeavoured to ſtop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my cloſet, which otherwiſe I certainly ſhould have done, and ſat on the top of it, where I might at leaſt preſerve myſelf ſome hours longer than by being ſhut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or if I eſcaped theſe dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miſerable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours under theſe circumſtances, expecting, and indeed wiſhing every moment to be my laſt.

I have already told the reader, that there were two ſtrong ſtaples fixed upon that ſide of my box which had no window, and into which the ſervant who uſed to carry me on horſeback would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waiſt. Being in this diſconſolate ſtate, I heard or at leaſt thought I heard ſome kind of grating noiſe on that ſide of my box where the ſtaples were fixed, and ſoon after I began to fancy, that the box was pulled or towed

towed along in the ſea; for I now and then felt a ſort of tugging, which made the waves riſe near the tops of my windows, leaving me almoſt in the dark. This gave me ſome faint hopes of relief; although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unſcrew one of my chairs, which were always faſtened to the floor; and having made a hard ſhift to ſcrew it down again directly under the ſlipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I underſtood. I then faſtened my handkerchief to a ſtick I uſually carried, and thruſting it up the hole waved it ſeveral times in the air, that if any boat or ſhip were near, the ſeamen might conjecture ſome unhappy mortal to be ſhut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my cloſet to be moved along; and in the ſpace of an hour, or better, that ſide of the box where the ſtaples were, and had no window, ſtruck againſt ſomething that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myſelf toſſed more than ever. I plainly heard a noiſe upon the cover of my cloſet like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it paſſed through the ring. I then found myſelf hoiſted up by degrees at leaſt three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thruſt up my ſtick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almoſt hoarſe. In return

return to which, I heard a great ſhout repeated three times, giving me ſuch tranſports of joy as are not to be conceived but by thoſe who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and ſomebody calling through the hole with a loud voice in the *Engliſh* tongue, If there be any body below, let them ſpeak. I anſwered, I was an *Engliſhman*, drawn by ill fortune into the greateſt calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged by all that was moving to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied, I was ſafe, for my box was faſtened to their ſhip; and the carpenter ſhould immediately come and ſaw a hole in the cover large enough to pull me out. I anſwered, that was needleſs, and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the ſea into the ſhip, and ſo into the captain's cabbin [a]. Some of them upon hearing me talk ſo wildly thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own ſtature and ſtrength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes ſawed a

[a] There are ſeveral little incidents which ſhew the author to have had a deep knowledge of human nature; and I think this is one. Although the principal advantages enumerated by *Gulliver* in the beginning of this chapter, of mingling again among his countrymen, depended on their being of the ſame ſize with himſelf, yet this is forgotten in his ardour to be delivered: and he is afterwards betrayed into the ſame abſurdity by his zeal to preſerve his furniture,

paſſage

paſſage about four feet ſquare, then let down a ſmall ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ſhip in a very weak condition.

The ſailors were all in amazement, and aſked me a thouſand queſtions, which I had no inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the ſight of ſo many pigmies, for ſuch I took them to be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine eyes to the monſtrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr. *Thomas Willcocks*, an honeſt worthy *Shropſhire* man, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his cabbin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own bed, adviſing me to take a little reſt, of which I had great need. Before I went to ſleep, I gave him to underſtand that I had ſome valuable furniture in my box too good to be loſt; a fine hammock; an handſome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet. That my cloſet was hung on all ſides, or rather quilted, with ſilk and cotton: that if he would let one of the crew bring my cloſet into his cabbin, I would open it there before him, and ſhew him my goods. The captain hearing me utter theſe abſurdities concluded I was raving: however (I ſuppoſe to pacify me) he promiſed to give order as I deſired, and going upon deck ſent ſome of his men down into my cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and ſtripped off the quilting; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedſtead,

bedſtead, being ſcrewed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the ſeamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off ſome of the boards for the uſe of the ſhip, and when they had got all they had a mind for let the hull drop into the ſea, which by reaſon of many breaches made in the bottom and ſides ſunk to rights. And indeed I was glad not to have been a ſpectator of the havock they made; becauſe I am confident it would have ſenſibly touched me by bringing former paſſages into my mind, which I had rather forget.

I ſlept ſome hours, but perpetually diſturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had eſcaped. However, upon waking I found myſelf much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the captain ordered ſupper immediately, thinking I had already faſted too long. He entertained me with great kindneſs, obſerving me not to look wildly, or talk inconſiſtently; and, when we were left alone, deſired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be ſet adrift in that monſtrous wooden cheſt. He ſaid, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking through his glaſs, he ſpied it at a diſtance, and thought it was a ſail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his courſe, in hopes of buying ſome biſket, his own beginning to fall ſhort. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he ſent out his long-boat to diſcover

diſcover what I was; that his men came back in a fright, ſwearing they had ſeen a ſwimming houſe. That he laughed at their folly, and went himſelf in the boat, ordering his men to take a ſtrong cable along with them. That the weather being calm he rowed round me ſeveral times, obſerved my windows, and wire-lattices that defended them. That he diſcovered two ſtaples upon one ſide, which was all of boards without any paſſage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that ſide, and faſtening a cable to one of the ſtaples, ordered them to tow my cheſt (as they called it) towards the ſhip. When it was there, he gave directions to faſten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raiſe up my cheſt with pullies, which all the ſailors were not able to do above two or three feet. He ſaid, they ſaw my ſtick and handkerchief thruſt out of the hole, and concluded that ſome unhappy man muſt be ſhut up in the cavity. I aſked, whether he or the crew had ſeen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he firſt diſcovered me? to which he anſwered, that, diſcourſing this matter with the ſailors while I was aſleep, one of them ſaid, he had *obſerved* three eagles flying towards the *north*, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the uſual ſize, which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the great heighth they were at; and he could not gueſs the reaſon of my queſtion. I then aſked the captain, how far he reckoned we might be from land? he

he ſaid, by the beſt computation he could make, we were at leaſt an hundred leagues. I aſſured him that he muſt be miſtaken by almoſt half, for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the ſea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was diſturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and adviſed me to go to bed in a cabbin he had provided. I aſſured him I was well refreſhed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my ſenſes as ever I was in my life. He then grew ſerious, and deſired to aſk me freely, whether I were not troubled in mind by the conſciouſneſs of ſome enormous crime, for which I was puniſhed at the command of ſome prince by expoſing me in that cheſt, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to ſea in a leaky veſſel without proviſions: for although he ſhould be ſorry to have taken ſo ill a man into his ſhip, yet he would engage his word to ſet me ſafe a-ſhore in the firſt port where we arrived. He added, that his ſuſpicions were much increaſed by ſome very abſurd ſpeeches I had delivered at firſt to his ſailors, and afterwards to himſelf, in relation to my cloſet or cheſt, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at ſupper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my ſtory, which I faithfully did from the laſt time I left *England* to the moment he firſt diſcovered me. And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, ſo this honeſt worthy gentleman,

tleman, who had ſome tincture of learning, and very good ſenſe, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But, farther to confirm all I had ſaid, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet ſhould be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket, (for he had already informed me how the ſeamen diſpoſed of my cloſet). I opened it in his own preſence, and ſhewed him the ſmall collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been ſo ſtrangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the ſtumps of the king's beard, and another of the ſame materials, but fixed into a paring of her majeſty's thumb-nail which ſerved for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins from a foot to half a yard long; four waſp-ſtings, like joiners tacks; ſome combings of the queen's hair; a gold ring which one day ſhe made me a preſent of in a moſt obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I deſired the captain would pleaſe to accept this ring in return of his civilities; which he abſolutely refuſed. I ſhewed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand from a maid of honour's toe; it was about the bigneſs of a *Kentiſh* pippin, and grown ſo hard, that, when I returned to *England*, I got it hollowed into a cup, and ſet in ſilver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouſe's ſkin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great curioſity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than ſuch a trifle could deſerve. It was drawn by an unſkilful ſurgeon in a miſtake from one of *Glumdalclitch*'s men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ach, but it was as ſound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well ſatisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and ſaid, he hoped, when we returned to *England*, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper, and making it public. My anſwer was, that I thought we were already over-ſtocked with books of travels: that nothing could now paſs which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted ſome authors leſs conſulted truth, than their own vanity, or intereſt, or the diverſion of ignorant readers: that my ſtory could contain little beſides common events, without thoſe ornamental deſcriptions of ſtrange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous cuſtoms and idolatry of ſavage people, with which moſt writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promiſed to take the matter into my thoughts.

He ſaid, he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me ſpeak ſo loud, aſking me whether the king or queen of that country

ountry were thick of hearing. I told him, was what I had been uſed to for above two ears paſt; and that I admired as much at the oices of him and his men, who ſeemed to me ly to whiſper, and yet I could hear them ell enough. But, when I ſpoke in that coun-y, it was like a man talking in the ſtreet to nother looking out from the top of a ſtee-le, unleſs when I was placed on a table, or eld in any perſon's hand. I told him, I had kewiſe obſerved another thing, that when I rſt got into the ſhip, and the ſailors ſtood all out me, I thought they were the moſt little ontemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For ndeed, while I was in that prince's country, could never endure to look in a glaſs, after ine eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodi-ious objects, becauſe the compariſon gave me o deſpicable a conceit of myſelf. The cap-ain ſaid, that while we were at ſupper, he bſerved me to look at every thing with a ſort f wonder, and that I often ſeemed hardly a-le to contain my laughter, which he knew not ell how to take, but imputed it to ſome diſor-er in my brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and wondered how I could forbear, when I ſaw is diſhes of the ſize of a ſilver three-pence, a g of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not ſo ig as a nut-ſhell; and ſo I went on, deſcrib-ng the reſt of his houſhold-ſtuff and proviſions fter the ſame manner. For although the ueen had ordered a little equipage of all things eceſſary for me, while I was in her ſervice,

yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw on every ſide of me, and I winked at my own littleneſs, as people do at their own faults. The captain underſtood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old *Engliſh* proverb, that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not obſerve my ſtomach ſo good although I had faſted all day; and, continuing in his mirth, proteſted he would have gladly given an hundred pounds to have ſeen my cloſet in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall from ſo great a heighth into the ſea; which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing object, worthy to have the deſcription of it tranſmitted to future ages: and the compariſon of *Phaeton* was ſo obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The captain, having been at *Tonquin*, was in his return to *England* driven north-eaſtward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we ſailed ſouthward a long time, and coaſting *New-Holland*, kept our courſe weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then ſouth-ſouth-weſt, till we doubled the *Cape of Good-Hope*. Our voyage was very proſperous, but I ſhall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The captain called in at one or two ports, and ſent in his long-boat for proviſions and freſh water, but I never went out of the ſhip till we came into the *Downs*, which was on the

the third day of *June*, 1706, about nine months after my eſcape. I offered to leave my goods in ſecurity for payment of my freight; but the captain proteſted he would not receive one farthing. We took a kind leave of each other, and I made him promiſe he would come to ſee me at my houſe in *Redriff*. I hired a horſe and guide for five ſhillings, which I borrowed of the captain.

As I was on the road, obſerving the littleneſs of the houſes, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myſelf in *Lilliput*. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them ſtand out of the way, ſo that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

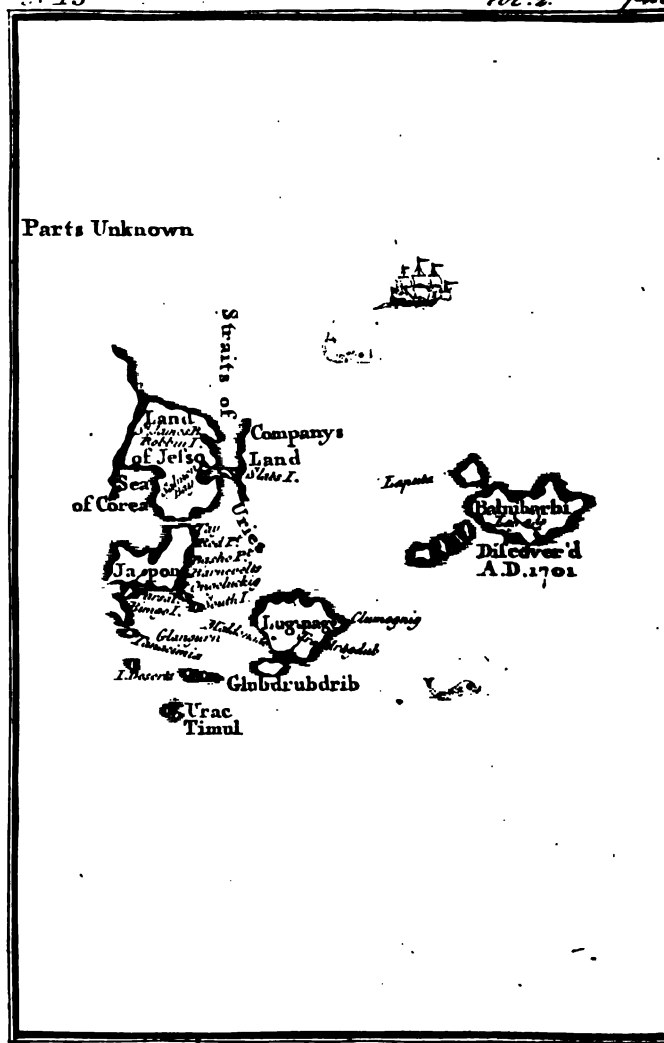
When I came to my own houſe, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the ſervants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a gooſe under a gate) for fear of ſtriking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I ſtooped lower than her knees, thinking ſhe could otherwiſe never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to aſk me bleſſing, but I could not ſee her till ſhe aroſe, having been ſo long uſed to ſtand with my head and eyes erect to above ſixty feet; and then I went to take her up with one hand by the waiſt. I looked down upon the ſervants, and one or two friends who were in the houſe, as if they had been pigmies, and I a giant. I told my wife ſhe had been too thrifty, for I found ſhe

had ſtarved herſelf and her daughter to nothing. In ſhort, I behaved myſelf ſo unaccountably, that they were all of the captain's opinion when he firſt ſaw me, and concluded I had loſt my wits. This I mention as an inſtance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time, I and my family and friends came to a right underſtanding: but my wife proteſted I ſhould never go to ſea any more; although my evil deſtiny ſo ordered, that ſhe had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the mean time, I here conclude the ſecond part of my unfortunate voyages [a].

[a] From the whole of theſe two voyages to *Lilliput* and *Brobdingnag* ariſes one general remark which, however obvious, has been overlooked by thoſe who conſider them as little more than the ſport of a wanton imagination. When human actions are aſcribed to pigmies and giants, there are few that do not excite either contempt, diſguſt, or horror; to aſcribe them therefore to ſuch beings was perhaps the moſt probable method of engaging the mind to examine them with attention, and judge of them with impartiality, by ſuſpending the faſcination of habit, and exhibiting familiar objects in a new light. The uſe of the fable then is not leſs apparent than important and extenſive; and that this uſe was intended by the author can be doubted only by thoſe who are diſpoſed to affirm, that order and regularity are the effects of chance.

A VOYAGE


Parts Unknown
Straits of
Uries
Land
of Jesso
Sea
of Corea
Companys
Land
Slats I.
Japon
Lugnage
Clumegnig
Glubdrubdrib
Urac
Timul
Lapata
Babuharbi
Discover'd
A.D. 1701

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pyrates. The malice of a Dutchman. *His arrival at an iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I Had not been at home above ten days, when captain *William Robinſon*, a *Corniſh* man, commander of the *Hope-well*, a ſtout ſhip of three hundred tons, came to my houſe. I had formerly been ſurgeon of another ſhip, where he was maſter and a fourth part owner, in a voyage to the *Levant*; he had always treated me more like a brother, than an inferior officer, and hearing of my arrival made me a viſit, as I apprehended, only out of friendſhip, for nothing paſſed more than what is uſual after long abſences. But repeating his viſits often, expreſſing his joy to find me in good health, aſking whether I were now ſettled for life, adding, that he intended a voyage to the *Eaſt-Indies* in two months; at laſt he plainly invited me, though with ſome apologies, to be ſurgeon of the ſhip; that I ſhould

have another ſurgeon under me, beſides our two mates; that my ſalary ſhould be double to the uſual pay; and that having experienced my knowledge in ſea-affairs to be at leaſt equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had ſhared in the command.

He ſaid ſo many other obliging things, and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a man, that I could not reject his propoſal; the thirſt I had of ſeeing the world, notwithſtanding my paſt misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to perſuade my wife, whoſe conſent however I at laſt obtained by the proſpect of advantage ſhe propoſed to her children.

We ſet out the 5th day of *Auguſt*, 1706, and arrived at *Fort St. George* the 11th of *April*, 1707. We ſtayed there three weeks to refreſh our crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence we went to *Tonquin*, where the captain reſolved to continue ſome time, becauſe many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſeveral months. Therefore, in hopes to defray ſome of the charges he muſt be at, he bought a ſloop, loaded it with ſeveral ſorts of goods, wherewith the *Tonquineſe* uſually trade to the neighbouring iſlands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me maſter of the ſloop, and gave me power to traffic, while he tranſacted his affairs at *Tonquin*.

We

We had not ſailed above three days, when, a great ſtorm ariſing, we were driven five days to the north-north-eaſt, and then to the eaſt; after which we had fair weather, but ſtill with a pretty ſtrong gale from the weſt. Upon the tenth day we were chaced by two pyrates, who ſoon overtook us; for my ſloop was ſo deep laden, that ſhe ſailed very ſlow, neither were we in a condition to defend ourſelves.

We were boarded about the ſame time by both the pyrates, who entered furiouſly at the head of their men; but finding us all proſtrate upon our faces (for ſo I gave order) they pinioned us with ſtrong ropes, and, ſetting a guard upon us, went to ſearch the ſloop.

I obſerved among them a *Dutchman*, who ſeemed to be of ſome authority, though he was not commander of either ſhip. He knew us by our countenances to be *Engliſhmen*, and jabbering to us in his own language, ſwore we ſhould be tied back to back, and thrown into the ſea. I ſpoke *Dutch* tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him in conſideration of our being chriſtians and proteſtants, of neighbouring countries in ſtrict alliance, that he would move the captains to take ſome pity on us. This inflamed his rage, he repeated his threatenings, and turning to his companions, ſpoke with great vehemence in the *Japaneſe* language, as I ſuppoſe, often uſing the word *chriſtianos*.

The

The largeſt of the two pyrate ſhips was commanded by a *Japaneſe* captain, who ſpoke a little *Dutch*, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral queſtions, which I anſwered in great humility, he ſaid we ſhould not die. I made the captain a very low bow, and then turning to the *Dutchman* ſaid, I was ſorry to find more mercy in an heathen, than in a brother chriſtian. But I had ſoon reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh words: for that malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to perſuade both the captains that I might be thrown into the ſea (which they would not yield to after the promiſe made me that I ſhould not die) however prevailed ſo far as to have a puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe, in all human appearance, than death itſelf. My men were ſent by an equal diviſion into both the pyrate ſhips, and my ſloop new manned. As to myſelf, it was determined that I ſhould be ſet a-drift in a ſmall canoe, with paddles and a ſail, and four days proviſions, which laſt the *Japaneſe* captain was ſo kind to double out of his own ſtores, and would permit no man to ſearch me. I got down into the canoe, while the *Dutchman* ſtanding upon the deck loaded me with all the curſes and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we ſaw the pyrates I had taken an obſervation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and of longitude 183. When I was at ſome diſtance from the pyrates, I diſcovered by my pocket-glaſs ſeveral iſlands

to

to the ſouth-eaſt. I ſet up my ſail, the wind being fair, with a deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe iſlands, which I made a ſhift to do in about three hours. It was all rocky, however I got many birds eggs, and ſtriking fire I kindled ſome heath and dry ſea-weed, by which I roaſted my eggs. I eat no other ſupper, being reſolved to ſpare my proviſions as much as I could. I paſſed the night under the ſhelter of a rock, ſtrewing ſome heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

The next day I ſailed to another iſland, and thence to a third and fourth, ſometimes uſing my ſail, and ſometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my diſtreſſes, let it ſuffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the laſt iſland in my ſight, which lay ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to the former.

This iſland was at a greater diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round, before I could find a convenient place to land in, which was a ſmall creek about three times the wideneſs of my canoe. I found the iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of graſs, and ſweet-ſmelling herbs. I took out my ſmall proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry ſea-weed, and parched graſs, which I deſigned to kindle the next day, and roaſt my eggs as well

as

as I could (for I had about me my flint, ſteel, match, and burning-glaſs). I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my proviſions. My bed was the ſame dry graſs and ſea-weed which I intended for fewel. I ſlept very little, for the diſquiets of my mind prevailed over my wearineſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how impoſſible it was to preſerve my life in ſo deſolate a place, and how miſerable my end muſt be. Yet found myſelf ſo liſtleſs and deſponding, that I had not the heart to riſe; and before I could get ſpirits enough to creep out of my cave, the day was far advanced. I walked a while among the rocks, the ſky was perfectly clear, and the ſun ſo hot, that I was forced to turn my face from it: when all on a ſudden it became obſcure, as I thought, in a manner very different from what happens by the interpoſition of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vaſt opake body between me and the ſun, moving forwards towards the iſland: it ſeemed to be about two miles high, and hid the ſun ſix or ſeven minutes, but I did not obſerve the air to be much colder, or the ſky more darkened, than if I had ſtood under the ſhade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm ſubſtance, the bottom flat, ſmooth, and ſhining very bright from the reflexion of the ſea below. I ſtood upon a heighth about two hundred yards from the ſhore, and ſaw this vaſt body deſcending almoſt to a parallel with me at leſs than an

Engliſh

Engliſh mile diſtance. I took out my pocket-perſpective, and could plainly diſcover numbers of people moving up and down the ſides of it, which appeared to be ſloping; but, what thoſe people were doing, I was not able to diſtinguiſh.

The natural love of life gave me ſome inward motions of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope, that this adventure might ſome way or other help to deliver me from the deſolate place and condition I was in. But at the ſame time the reader can hardly conceive my aſtoniſhment, to behold an iſland in the air, inhabited by men, who were able (as it ſhould ſeem) to raiſe or ſink, or put it into a progreſſive motion, as they pleaſed. But not being at that time in a diſpoſition to philoſophiſe upon this phænomenon, I rather choſe to obſerve what courſe the iſland would take, becauſe it ſeemed for a while to ſtand ſtill. Yet ſoon after it advanced nearer, and I could ſee the ſides of it encompaſſed with ſeveral gradations of galleries, and ſtairs at certain intervals to deſcend from one to the other. In the loweſt gallery I beheld ſome people fiſhing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was long ſince worn out) and my handkerchief towards the iſland; and upon its nearer approach I called and ſhouted with the utmoſt ſtrength of my voice; and then, looking circumſpectly, I beheld a crowd gathered to that ſide which was moſt in my view. I found

found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly diſcovered me; although they made no return to my ſhouting. But I could ſee four or five men running in great haſte up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, who then diſappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for orders to ſome perſon in authority upon this occaſion.

The number of people encreaſed, and in leſs than half an hour the iſland was moved and raiſed in ſuch a manner, that the loweſt gallery appeared in a parallel of leſs than an hundred yards diſtance from the heighth where I ſtood. I then put myſelf into the moſt ſupplicating poſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt accent; but received no anſwer. Thoſe, who ſtood neareſt overagainſt me, ſeemed to be perſons of diſtinction, as I ſuppoſed by their habit. They conferred earneſtly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, ſmooth dialect, not unlike in ſound to the *Italian*; and therefore I returned an anſwer in that language, hoping at leaſt, that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. Although neither of us underſtood the other, yet my meaning was eaſily known, for the people ſaw the diſtreſs I was in.

They made ſigns for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the ſhore, which I accordingly did; and the flying iſland being raiſed to a convenient heighth, the verge directly

rectly over me; a chain was let down from the loweſt gallery with a ſeat faſtened to the bottom, to which I fixed myſelf, and was drawn up by pullies.

CHAP. II.

The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the king, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women.*

AT my alighting I was ſurrounded with a crowd of people, but thoſe who ſtood neareſt ſeemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumſtances of wonder, neither indeed was I much in their debt; having never till then ſeen a race of mortals ſo ſingular in their ſhapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith *. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of ſuns, moons, and ſtars, interwoven with thoſe of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guittars, harpſicords, and many other inſtruments of muſic unknown to us in *Europe*. I obſerved here and there many.

* By this deſcription the author intended to ridicule thoſe who waſte life in ſpeculative ſcience, the powers of whoſe minds are as abſurdly employed as the eyes of the *Laputians*.

in

in the habit of ſervants with a blown bladder faſtened like a flayl to the end of a ſhort ſtick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a ſmall quantity of dried peaſe or little pebbles (as I was afterwards informed.) With theſe bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of thoſe who ſtood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It ſeems the minds of theſe people are ſo taken up with intenſe ſpeculations, that they neither can ſpeak, nor attend to the diſcourſes of others, without being rouſed by ſome external action upon the organs of ſpeech and hearing; for which reaſon thoſe perſons, who are able to afford it, always keep a *flapper* (the original is *climenole*) in their family, as one of their domeſtics, nor ever walk abroad or make viſits without him. And the buſineſs of this officer is, when two, three, or more perſons are in company, gently to ſtrike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to ſpeak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the ſpeaker addreſſeth himſelf. This *flapper* is likewiſe employed diligently to attend his maſter in his walks, and upon occaſion to give him a ſoft flap on his eyes, becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifeſt danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head againſt every poſt; and in the ſtreets of juſtling others, or being juſtled himſelf into the kennel.

It

J. J. Müller inv. del. et Sc.

It was neceſſary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the ſame loſs with me to underſtand the proceedings of theſe people, as they conducted me up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were aſcending, they forgot ſeveral times what they were about, and left me to myſelf, till their memories were again rouſed by their *flappers*; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the ſight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the ſhouts of the vulgar, whoſe thoughts and minds were more diſengaged.

At laſt we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of preſence, where I ſaw the king ſeated on his throne, attended on each ſide by perſons of prime quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with globes and ſpheres, and mathematical inſtruments of all kinds. His majeſty took not the leaſt notice of us, although our entrance was not without ſufficient noiſe by the concourſe of all perſons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem, and we attended at leaſt an hour, before he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him on each ſide a young page with flaps in their hands, and when they ſaw he was at leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he ſtarted like one awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards me and the compar y I was in, recollected the occaſion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He

ſpoke ſome words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my ſide, and flapt me gently on the right ear, but I made ſigns, as well as I could, that I had no occaſion for ſuch an inſtrument; which, as I afterwards found, gave his majeſty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my underſtanding. The king, as far as I could conjecture, aſked me ſeveral queſtions, and I addreſſed myſelf to him in all the languages I had. When it was found, that I could neither underſtand nor be underſtood, I was conducted by his order to an apartment in his palace, (this prince being diſtinguiſhed above all his predeceſſors for his hoſpitality to ſtrangers) where two ſervants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four perſons of quality, whom I remembered to have ſeen very near the king's perſon, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courſes of three diſhes each. In the firſt courſe there was a ſhoulder of mutton cut into an æquilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The ſecond courſe was two ducks truſſed up in the form of fiddles; ſauſages and puddings reſembling flutes and haut-boys, and a breaſt of veal in the ſhape of a harp. The ſervants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and ſeveral other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to aſk the names of ſeveral things in their language, and thoſe noble perſons by the aſſiſtance

of their *flappers* delighted to give me anſwers; hoping to raiſe my admiration of their great abilities, if I could be brought to converſe with them. I was ſoon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever elſe I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a perſon was ſent to me by the king's order attended by a *flapper*. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to underſtand by ſigns, that he was ſent to teach me the language. We ſat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns with the tranſlations over-againſt them; I likewiſe made a ſhift to learn ſeveral ſhort ſentences. For my tutor would order one of my ſervants to fetch ſomething, to turn about, to make a bow, to ſit, or to ſtand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the ſentence in writing. He ſhewed me alſo in one of his books the figures of the ſun, moon, and ſtars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar circles, together with the denominations of many figures of planes and ſolids. He gave me the names and deſcriptions of all the muſical inſtruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my words with their interpretations in alphabetical order. And thus in a few days by the help of a very faithful memory I got ſome inſight into their language.

The word, which I interpret the *flying* or *floating iſland* is in the original *Laputa*, where-

of I could never learn the true etymology. *Lap* in the old obſolete language ſignifieth *high*, and *untuh* a *governor*, from which they ſay by corruption was derived *Laputa*, from *Lapuntuh*. But I do not approve of this derivation, which ſeems to be a little ſtrained. I ventured to offer to the learned among them a conjecture of my own, that *Laputa* was *quaſi lap outed*; *lap* ſignifying properly the dancing of the ſun-beams in the ſea, and *outed* a wing, which however I ſhall not obtrude, but ſubmit to the judicious reader.

Thoſe to whom the king had entruſted me, obſerving how ill I was clad, ordered a taylor to come next morning, and take meaſure for a ſuit of cloaths. This operator did his office after a different manner from thoſe of his trade in *Europe*. He firſt took my altitude by a quadrant, and then with rule and compaſſes deſcribed the dimenſions and out-lines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper; and in ſix days brought my cloaths very ill made, and quite out of ſhape, by happening to miſtake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that I obſerved ſuch accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement for want of cloaths, and by an indiſpoſition that held me ſome days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when I went next to court was able to underſtand many things the king ſpoke, and to return him ſome kind of anſwers. His majeſty had given orders, that the iſland ſhould move north-

north-eaſt and by eaſt to the vertical point over *Lagado*, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below upon the firm earth. It was about ninety leagues diſtant, and our voyage laſted four days and an half. I was not in the leaſt ſenſible of the progreſſive motion made in the air by the iſland. On the ſecond morning about eleven a clock the king himſelf in perſon attended by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, having prepared all their muſical inſtruments, played on them for three hours without intermiſſion, ſo that I was quite ſtunned with the noiſe; neither could I poſſibly gueſs the meaning, till my tutor informed me. He ſaid, that the people of their iſland had their ears adapted to hear the muſic of the ſpheres, which always played at certain periods, and the court was now prepared to bear their part, in whatever inſtrument they moſt excelled.

In our journey towards *Lagado*, the capital city, his majeſty ordered that the iſland ſhould ſtop over certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his ſubjects. And to this purpoſe ſeveral packthreads were let down with ſmall weights at the bottom. On theſe packthreads the people ſtrung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the ſcraps of paper faſtened by ſchool-boys at the end of the ſtring that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pullies.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great aſſiſtance in acquiring their phraſeology, which depended much upon that ſcience and muſic; and in the latter I was not unſkilled. Their ideas are perpetually converſant in lines and figures. If they would for example praiſe the beauty of a woman, or any other animal, they deſcribe it by rhombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipſes, and other geometrical terms, or by words of art drawn from muſic, needleſs here to repeat. I obſerved in the king's kitchen all ſorts of mathematical and muſical inſtruments, after the figures of which they cut up the joints that were ſerved to his majeſty's table.

Their houſes are very ill built, the walls bevil, without one right-angle in any apartment; and this defect ariſeth from the contempt they bear to practical geometry, which they deſpiſe as vulgar and mechanic, thoſe inſtructions they give being too refined for the intellectuals of their workmen, which occaſions perpetual miſtakes. And although they are dextrous enough upon a piece of paper in the management of the rule, the pencil, and the divider, yet in the common actions and behaviour of life I have not ſeen a more clumſy, awkward, and unhandy people, nor ſo ſlow and perplexed in their conceptions upon all other ſubjects, except thoſe of mathematics and muſic. They are very bad reaſoners, and vehemently given to oppoſition, unleſs when they happen to be of the right opinion, which is ſeldom their caſe.

caſe. Imagination, fancy, and invention they are wholly ſtrangers to, nor have any words in their language, by which thoſe ideas can be expreſſed; the whole compaſs of their thoughts and mind being ſhut up within the two forementioned ſciences.

Moſt of them, and eſpecially thoſe who deal in the aſtronomical part, have great faith in judicial aſtrology, although they are aſhamed to own it publicly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the ſtrong diſpoſition I obſerved in them towards news and politics, perpetually enquiring into public affairs, giving their judgments in matters of ſtate, and paſſionately diſputing every inch of a party opinion. I have indeed obſerved the ſame diſpoſition among moſt of the mathematicians I have known in *Europe*, although I could never diſcover the leaſt analogy between the two ſciences; unleſs thoſe people ſuppoſe, that becauſe the ſmalleſt circle hath as many degrees as the largeſt, therefore the regulation and management of the world require no more abilities, than the handling and turning of a globe: but I rather take this quality to ſpring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be moſt curious and conceited in matters where we have leaſt concern, and for which we are leaſt adapted either by ſtudy or nature.

Theſe people are under continual diſquietudes, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind; and their diſturbances proceed from

cauſes, which very little affect the reſt of mortals. Their apprehenſions ariſe from ſeveral changes they dread in the celeſtial bodies. For inſtance, that the earth by the continual approaches of the ſun towards it muſt in courſe of time be abſorbed, or ſwallowed up. That the face of the ſun will by degrees be encruſted with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world. That the earth very narrowly eſcaped a bruſh from the tail of the laſt comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to aſhes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one and thirty years hence, will probably deſtroy us. For, if in its perihelion it ſhould approach within a certain degree of the ſun (as by their calculations they have reaſon to dread) it will receive a degree of heat ten thouſand times more intenſe, than that of red hot glowing iron; and, in its abſence from the ſun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred thouſand and fourteen miles long; through which if the earth ſhould paſs at the diſtance of one hundred thouſand miles from the *nucleus*, or main body of the comet, it muſt in its paſſage be ſet on fire, and reduced to aſhes. That the ſun, daily ſpending its rays without any nutriment to ſupply them, will at laſt be wholly conſumed and annihilated; which muſt be attended with the deſtruction of this earth and of all the planets that receive their light from it [a].

[a] All theſe were ſuppoſitions of perſons eminent in their time for mathematical knowledge.

They

They are ſo perpetually alarmed with the apprehenſions of theſe, and the like impending dangers, that they can neither ſleep quietly in their beds, nor have any reliſh for the common pleaſures or amuſements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the firſt queſtion is about the ſun's health, how he looked at his ſetting and riſing, and what hopes they have to avoid the ſtroke of the approaching comet. This converſation they are apt to run into with the ſame temper, that boys diſcover in delighting to hear terrible ſtories of ſpirits and hobgoblins, which they greedily liſten to, and dare not go to bed for fear.

The women of the iſland have abundance of vivacity; they contemn their huſbands, and are exceedingly fond of ſtrangers, whereof there is always a conſiderable number from the continent below attending at court, either upon affairs of the ſeveral towns and corporations, or their own particular occaſions, but are much deſpiſed, becauſe they want the ſame endowments. Among theſe the ladies chuſe their gallants: but the vexation is, that they act with too much eaſe and ſecurity, for the huſband is always ſo rapt in ſpeculation, that the miſtreſs and lover may proceed to the greateſt familiarities before his face, if he be but provided with paper and implements, and without his *flapper* at his ſide.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the iſland, although I think it the moſt

moſt delicious ſpot of ground in the world; and although they live here in the greateſt plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they pleaſe, they long to ſee the world, and take the diverſions of the metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular licence from the king; and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the people of quality have found by frequent experience, how hard it is to perſuade their women to return from below. I was told, that a great court lady, who had ſeveral children, is married to the prime miniſter, the richeſt ſubject in the kingdom, a very graceful perſon, extremely fond of her, and lives in the fineſt palace of the iſland, went down to *Lagado* on the pretence of health, there hid herſelf for ſeveral months, till the king ſent a warrant to ſearch for her, and ſhe was found in an obſcure eating-houſe all in rags, having pawned her cloaths to maintain an old deformed foot-man, who beat her every day, and in whoſe company ſhe was taken much againſt her will. And although her huſband received her with all poſſible kindneſs, and without the leaſt reproach, ſhe ſoon after contrived to ſteal down again with all her jewels to the ſame gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

This may perhaps paſs with the reader rather for an *European* or *Engliſh* ſtory, than for one of a country ſo remote. But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the caprices of women-kind are

are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be eaſily imagined,

In about a month's time, I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to anſwer moſt of the king's queſtions, when I had the honour to attend him. His majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt curioſity to enquire into the laws, government, hiſtory, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been, but confined his queſtions to the ſtate of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often rouſed by his *flapper* on each ſide.

CHAP. III.

A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great improvements in the latter. The king's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections.*

I Deſired leave of this prince to ſee the curioſities of the iſland, which he was graciouſly pleaſed to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know, to what cauſe in art or in nature it owed its ſeveral motions, whereof I will now give a philoſophical account to the reader.

The flying or floating iſland is exactly circular, its diameter 7837 yards, or about four miles and an half, and conſequently contains ten

ten thouſand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom, or under ſurface, which appears to thoſe who view it from below, is one even regular plate of adamant, ſhooting up to the height of about two hundred yards, Above it lie the ſeveral minerals in their uſual order, and over all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The declivity of the upper ſurface, from the circumference to the center, is the natural cauſe why all the dews and rains, which fall upon the iſland, are conveyed in ſmall rivulets towards the middle, where they are emptied into four large baſons, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two hundred yards diſtant from the center. From theſe baſons the water is continually exhaled by the ſun in the day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Beſides, as it is in the power of the monarch to raiſe the iſland above the region of clouds and vapours, he can prevent the falling of dews and rains whenever he pleaſes. For the higheſt clouds cannot riſe above two miles, as naturaliſts agree, at leaſt they were never known to do ſo in that country.

At the center of the iſland there is a chaſm about fifty yards in diameter, from whence the aſtronomers deſcend into a large dome, which is therefore called *ſtandona gagnole*, or the *aſtronomer's cave*, ſituated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper ſurface of the adamant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually burning, which from the reflection of

the

the adamant, caſt a ſtrong light into every part. The place is ſtored with great variety of ſextants, quadrants, teleſcopes, aſtrolabes, and other aſtronomical inſtruments. But the greateſt curioſity, upon which the fate of the iſland depends, is a loadſtone of a prodigious ſize, in ſhape reſembling a weaver's ſhuttle. It is in length ſix yards, and in the thickeſt part at leaſt three yards over. This magnet is ſuſtained by a very ſtrong axle of adamant paſſing through its middle, upon which it plays, and is poiſed ſo exactly, that the weakeſt hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow cylinder of adamant, four feet deep, as many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and ſupported by eight adamantine feet, each ſix yards high. In the middle of the concave ſide there is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extremities of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is occaſion.

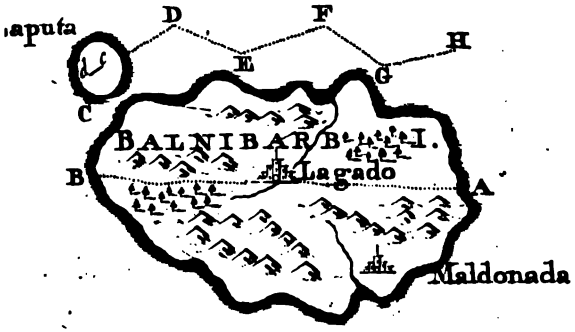
The ſtone cannot be moved from its place by any force, becauſe the hoop and its feet are one continued piece with that body of adamant, which conſtitutes the bottom of the iſland.

By means of this load-ſtone the iſland is made to riſe and fall, and move from one place to another. For, with reſpect to that part of the earth over which the monarch preſides, the ſtone is endued at one of its ſides with an attractive power, and at the other with a repulſive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attracting end towards the earth,

the

the iſland deſcends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the iſland mounts directly upwards. When the poſition of the ſtone is oblique, the motion of the iſland is ſo too: for in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

By this oblique motion the iſland is conveyed to different parts of the monarch's dominions. To explain the manner of its progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a line drawn croſs the dominions of *Balnibarbi*, let the line *c d* repreſent the load-ſtone, of which let *d* be the repelling end, and *c* the attracting end, the iſland being over *C*; let the ſtone be placed in the poſition *c d*, with its repelling end downwards; then the iſland will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the ſtone be turned upon its axle till its attracting end points towards *E*, and then the iſland will be carried obliquely towards *E*; where if the ſtone be again turned upon its axle till it ſtands in the poſition *E F*, with its repelling point downward, the iſland will riſe obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting end towards *G*, the iſland may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H* by turning the ſtone, ſo as to make its repelling extremity point directly downward. And thus, by changing the ſituation of the ſtone as often as there is occaſion, the iſland is made to riſe and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by thoſe alternate riſings and fallings (the obliquity being not conſiderable) is conveyed from


apuſa
D
F
H
E
G
C
BALNIBARBI.
Lagado
B
A
Maldonada

from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it muſt be obſerved, that this iſland cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it riſe above the heighth of four miles. For which the aſtronomers (who have written large ſyſtems concerning the ſtone) aſſign the following reaſon: that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the diſtance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the ſtone in the bowels of the earth, and in the ſea about ſix leagues diſtant from the ſhore, is not diffuſed through the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the king's dominions; and it was eaſy, from the great advantage of ſuch a ſuperior ſituation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the ſtone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the iſland ſtandeth ſtill; for in that caſe the extremities of it, being at equal diſtance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in puſhing upwards, and conſequently no motion can enſue.

This load-ſtone is under the care of certain aſtronomers, who from time to time give it ſuch poſitions as the monarch directs. They ſpend the greateſt part of their lives in obſerving the celeſtial bodies, which they do by the aſſiſtance of glaſſes far excelling ours in goodneſs. For, although their largeſt teleſcopes do

do not exceed three feet, they magnify much more than thoſe of an hundred with us, and ſhew the ſtars with greater clearneſs. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their diſcoveries much farther than our aſtronomers in *Europe*; for they have made a catalogue of ten thouſand fixed ſtars, whereas the largeſt of ours do not contain above one third part of that number. They have likewiſe diſcovered two leſſer ſtars, or *ſatellites*, which revolve about *Mars*, whereof the innermoſt is diſtant from the center of the primary planet exactly three of his diameters, and the outermoſt, five; the former revolves in the ſpace of ten hours, and the latter in twenty-one and a half; ſo that the ſquares of their periodical times are very near in the ſame proportion with the cubes of their diſtance from the center of *Mars*, which evidently ſhews them to be governed by the ſame law of gravitation, that influences the other heavenly bodies.

They have obſerved ninety-three different comets, and ſettled their periods with great exactneſs. If this be true (and they affirm it with great confidence) it is much to be wiſhed, that their obſervations were made public, whereby the theory of comets, which at preſent is very lame and defective, might be brought to the ſame perfection with other parts of aſtronomy.

The king would be the moſt abſolute prince in the univerſe, if he could but prevail on a miniſtry to join with him; but theſe having

their

their eſtates below on the continent, and conſidering that the office of a favourite hath a very uncertain tenure, would never conſent to the enſlaving their country.

If any town ſhould engage in rebellion or mutiny, fall into violent factions, or refuſe to pay the uſual tribute, the king hath two methods of reducing them to obedience. The firſt and the mildeſt courſe is by keeping the iſland hovering over ſuch a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the ſun and the rain, and conſequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diſeaſes And if the crime deſerve it, they are at the ſame time pelted from above with great ſtones, againſt which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houſes are beaten to pieces. But if they ſtill continue obſtinate, or offer to raiſe inſurrections, he proceeds to the laſt remedy by letting the iſland drop directly upon their heads, which makes an univerſal deſtruction both of houſes and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is ſeldom driven, neither indeed is he willing to put it in execution, nor dare his miniſters adviſe him to an action, which as it would render them odious to the people, ſo it would be a great damage to their own eſtates, which lie all below, for the iſland is the king's demeſn.

But there is ſtill indeed a more weighty reaſon, why the kings of this country have

been always averſe from executing ſo terrible an action, unleſs upon the utmoſt neceſſity. For if the town intended to be deſtroyed ſhould have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger cities, a ſituation probably choſen at firſt with a view to prevent ſuch a cataſtrophe; or if it abound in high ſpires, or pillars of ſtone, a ſudden fall might endanger the bottom or under ſurface of the iſland, which, although it conſiſt, as I have ſaid, of one intire adamant two hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a ſhock, or burſt by approaching too near the fires from the houſes below, as the backs both of iron and ſtone will often do in our chimnies. Of all this the people are well appriſed, and underſtand how far to carry their obſtinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the king, when he is higheſt provoked, and moſt determined to preſs a city to rubbiſh, orders the iſland to deſcend with great gentleneſs out of a pretence of tenderneſs to his people; but indeed for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom; in which caſe, it is the opinion of all their philoſophers, that the load-ſtone could no longer hold it up, and the whole maſs would fall to the ground.

By a fundamental law of this realm neither the king, nor either of his two elder ſons, are permitted to leave the iſland, nor the queen, till ſhe is paſt child-bearing.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great lord. His converſation with that lord.*

ALthough I cannot ſay that I was ill treated in this iſland, yet I muſt confeſs I thought myſelf too much neglected, not without ſome degree of contempt. For neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and muſic, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other ſide, after having ſeen all the curioſities of the iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe people. They were indeed excellent in two ſciences, for which I have great eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed, but at the ſame time ſo abſtracted and involved in ſpeculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable companions. I converſed only with women, tradeſmen, *flappers*, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there; by which at laſt I rendered myſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only people, from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable anſwer.

I had obtained by hard ſtudy a good degree of knowledge in their language: I was weary of being confined to an iſland, where I received ſo little countenance, and reſolved to leave it with the firſt opportunity.

There was a great lord at court, nearly related to the king, and for that reaſon alone, uſed with reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid perſon among them. He had performed many eminent ſervices for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour, but ſo ill an ear for muſic, that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither could his tutors, without extreme difficulty teach him to demonſtrate the moſt eaſy propoſition in the mathematics. He was pleaſed to ſhew me many marks of favour, often did me the honour of a viſit, deſired to be informed in the affairs of *Europe*, the laws and cuſtoms, the manners and learning of the ſeveral countries where I had travelled. He liſtened to me with great attention, and made very wiſe obſervations on all I ſpoke. He had two *flappers* attending him for ſtate, but never made uſe of them, except at court and in viſits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw, when we were alone together.

I entreated this illuſtrious perſon to intercede in my behalf with his majeſty for leave to depart, which he accordingly did, as he was pleaſed to tell me with regret: for indeed he

he had made me ſeveral offers very advantageous, which however I refuſed with expreſſions of the higheſt acknowledgment.

On the 16th of *February* I took leave of his majeſty and the court. The king made me a preſent to the value of about two hundred pounds *Engliſh*, and my protector, his kinſman, as much more, together with a letter of recommendation to a friend of his in *Lagado*, the metropolis: the iſland being then hovering over a mountain about two miles from it, I was let down from the loweſt gallery, in the ſame manner as I had been taken up.

The continent, as far as it is ſubject to the monarch of the *flying iſland*, paſſes under the general name of *Balnibarbi*; and the metropolis, as I ſaid before, is called *Lagado*. I felt ſome little ſatisfaction in finding myſelf on firm ground. I walked to the city without any concern, being clad like one of the natives, and ſufficiently inſtructed to converſe with them. I ſoon found out the perſon's houſe, to whom I was recommended, preſented my letter from his friend the grandee in the iſland, and was received with much kindneſs. This great lord, whoſe name was *Munodi*, ordered me an apartment in his own houſe, where I continued during my ſtay, and was entertained in a moſt hoſpitable manner.

The next morning after my arrival he took me in his chariot to ſee the town, which is

about half the bigneſs of *London*, but the houſes very ſtrangely built, and moſt of them out of repair. The people in the ſtreets walked faſt, looked wild, their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags. We paſſed through one of the town gates, and went about three miles into the country, where I ſaw many labourers working with ſeveral ſorts of tools in the ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about; neither did I obſerve any expectation either of corn or graſs, although the ſoil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at theſe odd appearances both in town and country; and I made bold to deſire my conductor, that he would be pleaſed to explain to me, what could be meant by ſo many buſy heads, hands, and faces both in the ſtreets and the fields, becauſe I did not diſcover any good effects they produced; but, on the contrary, I never knew a ſoil ſo unhappily cultivated, houſes ſo ill contrived and ſo ruinous, or a people whoſe countenances and habit expreſſed ſo much miſery and want.

This lord *Munodi* was a perſon of the firſt rank, and had been ſome years governor of *Lagado*; but by a cabal of miniſters was diſcharged for inſufficiency. However, the king treated him with tenderneſs, as a well-meaning man, but of a low contemptible underſtanding.

When I gave that free cenſure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further anſwer, than by telling me, that I had not been

been long enough among them to form a judgment; and that the different nations of the world had different cuſtoms; with other common topics to the ſame purpoſe. But, when we returned to his palace, he aſked me how I liked the building, what abſurdities I obſerved, and what quarrel I had with the dreſs or looks of his domeſtics. This he might ſafely do; becauſe every thing about him was magnificent, regular, and polite. I anſwered, that his excellency's prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from thoſe defects, which folly and beggary had produced in others. He ſaid, if I would go with him to his country-houſe about twenty miles diſtant, where his eſtate lay, there would be more leiſure for this kind of converſation. I told his excellency, that I was entirely at his diſpoſal; and accordingly we ſet out next morning.

During our journey he made me obſerve the ſeveral methods uſed by farmers in managing their lands; which to me were wholly unaccountable; for except in ſome very few places I could not diſcover one ear of corn, or blade of graſs. But in three hours travelling the ſcene was wholly altered; we came into a moſt beautiful country; farmers houſes at ſmall diſtances neatly built, the fields encloſed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have ſeen a more delightful proſpect. His excellency obſerved my countenance to clear up;

he told me with a ſigh, that there his eſtate began, and would continue the ſame, till we ſhould come to his houſe. That his countrymen ridiculed and deſpiſed him for managing his affairs no better, and for ſetting ſo ill an example to the kingdom, which however was followed by very few, ſuch as were old, and wilful, and weak like himſelf.

We came at length to the houſe, which was indeed a noble ſtructure, built according to the beſt rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves, were all diſpoſed with exact judgment and taſte. I gave due praiſes to every thing I ſaw, whereof his excellency took not the leaſt notice till after ſupper; when, there being no third companion, he told me with a very melancholy air, that he doubted he muſt throw down his houſes in town and country to rebuild them after the preſent mode, deſtroy all his plantations, and caſt others into ſuch a form as modern uſage required, and give the ſame directions to all his tenants, unleſs he would ſubmit to incur the cenſure of pride, ſingularity, affectation, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps encreaſe his majeſty's diſpleaſure.

That the admiration I appeared to be under, would ceaſe or diminiſh, when he had informed me of ſome particulars, which probably I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own ſpeculations to have regard to what paſſed here below.

The

The ſum of his diſcourſe was to this effect: that about forty years ago certain perſons went up to *Laputa*, either upon buſineſs or diverſion, and after five months continuance came back with a very little ſmattering in mathematics, but full of volatile ſpirits acquired in that airy region. That theſe perſons upon their return began to diſlike the management of every thing below, and fell into ſchemes of putting all arts, ſciences, languages, and mechanics upon a new foot. To this end they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in *Lagado*; and the humour prevailed ſo ſtrongly among the people, that there is not a town of any conſequence in the kingdom without ſuch an academy. In theſe colleges the profeſſors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new inſtruments and tools for all trades and manufactures, whereby, as they undertake, one man ſhall do the work of ten, a palace may be built in a week of materials ſo durable, as to laſt for ever without repairing. All the fruits of the earth ſhall come to maturity at whatever ſeaſon we think fit to chuſe, and increaſe an hundred fold more than they do at preſent; with innumerable other happy propoſals. The only inconvenience is, that none of theſe projects are yet brought to perfection; and in the mean time the whole country lies miſerably waſte, the houſes in ruins, and the people without food or cloaths. By all which, inſtead of being diſcouraged, they are fifty times more violent-

ly bent upon proſecuting their ſchemes, driven equally on by hope and deſpair: that as for himſelf, being not of an enterpriſing ſpirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houſes his anceſtors had built, and act as they did in every part of life without innovation. That ſome few other perſons of quality and gentry had done the ſame, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, as enemies to art, ignorant, and ill commonwealths-men, preferring their own eaſe and ſloth before the general improvement of their country.

His lordſhip added, that he would not by any further particulars prevent the pleaſure I ſhould certainly take in viewing the grand academy, whither he was reſolved I ſhould go. He only deſired me to obſerve a ruined building upon the ſide of a mountain about three miles diſtant, of which he gave me this account: that he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his houſe, turned by a current from a large river, and ſufficient for his own family as well as a great number of his tenants. That about ſeven years ago, a club of thoſe projectors came to him with propoſals to deſtroy this mill, and build another on the ſide of that mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal muſt be cut for a repoſitory of water to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to ſupply the mill: becauſe the wind and air upon a heighth agitated the water, and thereby

by made it fitter for motion: and becauſe the water deſcending down a declivity would turn the mill with half the current of a river, whoſe courſe is more upon a level. He ſaid, that being then not very well with the court, and preſſed by many of his friends, he complied with the propoſal; and after employing an hundred men for two years the work miſcarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame intirely upon him, railing at him ever ſince, and putting others upon the ſame experiment with equal aſſurance of ſucceſs, as well as equal diſappointment.

In a few days we came back to town, and his excellency conſidering the bad character he had in the academy would not go with me himſelf, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My lord was pleaſed to repreſent me as a great admirer of projects, and a perſon of much curioſity, and eaſy belief; which indeed was not without truth; for I had myſelf been a ſort of projector in my younger days.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. *The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves* [a].

THIS academy is not an entire ſingle building, but a continuation of ſeveral houſes on both ſides of a ſtreet, which growing waſte was purchaſed, and applied to that uſe.

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room hath in it one or more projectors; and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred rooms.

The firſt man I ſaw was of a meagre aſpect, with ſooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged and ſinged in ſeveral places. His cloaths, ſhirt, and ſkin, were all of the ſame colour. He had been eight years upon a project for extracting ſun-beams out of cucumbers, which were to be put in vials

[a] However wild the deſcription of the flying iſland and the manners and various projects of the philoſophers of *Lagado* may appear, yet it is a *real* picture embelliſhed with much *latent* wit and humour. ORRERY.

This note in general ſeems o be a teſtimony of his lordſhip's approbation, but it is not eaſy to diſcover what in particular is meant by the word *real*, ſince every picture is a real picture, whether it be copied from nature or fancy; and indeed it is equally difficult to conceive how a *picture* of any kind can be embelliſhed with that which is *hidden*.

hermetically

hermetically ſealed, and let out to warm the air in raw inclement ſummers. He told me, he did not doubt, that in eight years more he ſhould be able to ſupply the governor's gardens with ſun-ſhine at a reaſonable rate; but he complained that his ſtock was low, and entreated me to give him ſomething as an encouragement to ingenuity, eſpecially ſince this had been a very dear ſeaſon for cucumbers. I made him a ſmall preſent, for my lord had furniſhed me with money on purpoſe, becauſe he knew their practice of begging from all who go to ſee them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to haſten back, being almoſt overcome with a horrible ſtink. My conductor preſſed me forward, conjuring me in a whiſper to give no offence, which would be highly reſented, and therefore I durſt not ſo much as ſtop my noſe. The projector of this cell was the moſt ancient ſtudent of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow; his hands and cloaths dawbed over with filth. When I was preſented to him he gave me a cloſe embrace (a compliment I could well have excuſed.) His employment from his firſt coming into the academy was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food by ſeparating the ſeveral parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the gall, making the odour exhale, and ſcumming off the ſaliva. He had a weekly allowance from the ſociety of a veſſel

a veſſel filled with human ordure about the bigneſs of a *Briſtol* barrel.

I ſaw another at work to calcine ice into gunpowder, who likewiſe ſhewed me a treatiſe he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publiſh.

There was a moſt ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houſes by beginning at the roof, and working downwards to the foundation, which he juſtified to me by the like practice of thoſe two prudent inſects the bee and the ſpider.

There was a man born blind, who had ſeveral apprentices in his own condition: their employment was to mix colours for painters, which their maſter taught them to diſtinguiſh by feeling and ſmelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their leſſons, and the profeſſor himſelf happened to be generally miſtaken. This artiſt is much encouraged and eſteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleaſed with a projector, who had found a device of plowing the ground with hogs to ſave the charges of ploughs, cattle, and labour. The method is this: in an acre of ground you bury at ſix inches diſtance and eight deep a quantity of acorns, dates, cheſnuts, and other maſte or vegetables, whereof theſe animals are fondeſt: then you drive ſix hundred or more of them into the field, where in a few days they will root up the whole ground in ſearch of their

their food, and make it fit for ſowing, at the ſame time manuring it with their dung; it is true, upon experiment they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However, it is not doubted that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

I went into another room, where the walls and cieling were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow paſſage for the artiſt to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to diſturb his webs. He lamented the fatal miſtake the world had been ſo long in of uſing ſilk-worms, while we had ſuch plenty of domeſtic inſects who infinitely excelled the former, becauſe they underſtood how to weave as well as ſpin. And he propoſed farther, that by employing ſpiders the charge of dying ſilks ſhould be wholly ſaved; whereof I was fully convinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt number of flies moſt beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his ſpiders, aſſuring us that the webs would take a tincture from them; and as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit every body's fancy, as ſoon as he could find proper food for the flies, of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter to give a ſtrength and conſiſtence to the threads.

There was an aſtronomer, who had undertaken to place a ſun-dial upon the great weather-cock on the town-houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diurnal motions of the earth and ſun,

ſun, ſo as to anſwer and coincide with all accidental turnings of the wind.

I was complaining of a ſmall fit of the cholic, upon which my conductor led me into a room where a great phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing that diſeaſe by contrary operations from the ſame inſtrument. He had a large pair of bellows with a long ſlender muzzle of ivory: this he conveyed eight inches up the *anus*, and drawing in the wind he affirmed he could make the guts as lank as a dried bladder. But when the diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while the bellows were full of wind, which he diſcharged into the body of the patient; then withdrew the inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his thumb ſtrongly againſt the orifice of the fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like water put into a pump) and the patient recover. I ſaw him try both experiments upon a dog, but could not diſcern any effect from the former. After the latter the animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a diſcharge, as was very offenſive to me and my companions. The dog died on the ſpot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame operation.

I viſited many other apartments, but ſhall not trouble my reader with all the curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of brevity.

I had

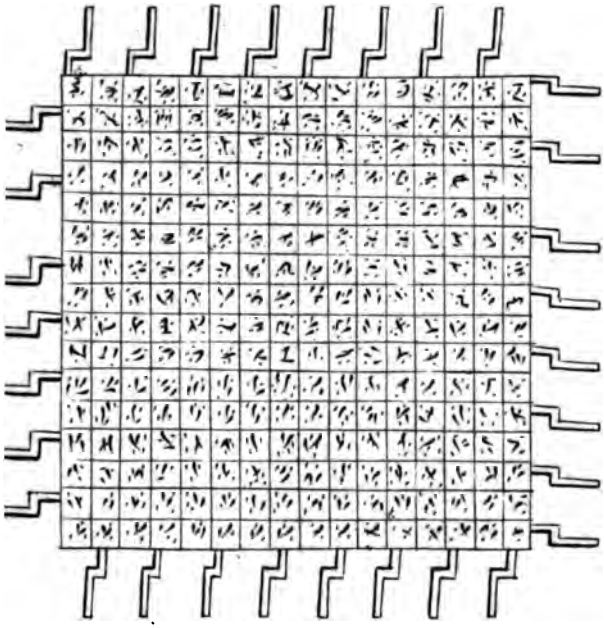
I had hitherto ſeen only one ſide of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of ſpeculative learning, of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious perſon more, who is called among them *the univerſal artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curioſities, and fifty men at work. Some were condenſing air into a dry tangible ſubſtance by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate; others ſoftening marble for pillows and pincuſhions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horſe to preſerve them from foundering. The artiſt himſelf was at that time buſy upon two great deſigns; the firſt to ſow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true ſeminal virtue to be contained, as he demonſtrated by ſeveral experiments, which I was not ſkilful enough to comprehend. The other was by a certain compoſition of gums, minerals, and vegetables, outwardly applied to prevent the growth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped in a reaſonable time to propagate the breed of naked ſheep all over the kingdom.

We croſſed a walk to the other part of the academy, where as I have already ſaid the projectors in ſpeculative learning reſided.

The firſt profeſſor I ſaw was in a very large room with forty pupils about him. After ſalutation obſerving me to look earneſtly upon a

frame, which took up the greateſt part of both the length and breadth of the room, he ſaid perhaps I might wonder to ſee him employed in a project for improving ſpeculative knowledge by practical and mechanical operations. But the world would ſoon be ſenſible of its uſefulneſs; and he flattered himſelf, that a more noble exalted thought never ſprang in any other man's head. Every one knew, how laborious the uſual method is of attaining to arts and ſciences; whereas by his contrivance the moſt ignorant perſon at a reaſonable charge and with a little bodily labour might write books in philoſophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the leaſt aſſiſtance from genius or ſtudy. He then led me to the frame, about the ſides whereof all his pupils ſtood in ranks. It was twenty feet ſquare, placed in the middle of the room. The ſuperficies was compoſed of ſeveral bits of wood about the bigneſs of a dye, but ſome larger than others. They were all linked together by ſlender wires. Theſe bits of wood were covered on every ſquare with paper paſted on them; and on theſe papers were written all the words of their language in their ſeveral moods, tenſes, and declenſions; but without any order. The profeſſor then deſired me to obſerve; for he was going to ſet his engine at work. The pupils at his command took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame; and giving them a ſudden

turn



turn the whole diſpoſition of the words was intirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the lads to read the ſeveral lines ſoftly, as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together, that might make part of a ſentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were ſcribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn the engine was ſo contrived, that the words ſhifted into new places, as the ſquare bits of wood moved upſide down.

Six hours a day the young ſtudents were employed in this labour, and the profeſſor ſhewed me ſeveral volumes in large folio already collected of broken ſentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of thoſe rich materials to give the world a compleat body of all arts and ſciences; which however might be ſtill improved and much expedited, if the public would raiſe a fund for making and employing five hundred ſuch frames in *Lagado*, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their ſeveral collections.

He aſſured me, that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the ſtricteſt computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of ſpeech.

I made my humbleſt acknowledgment to this illuſtrious perſon for his great communi-

cativeneſs; and promiſed, if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him juſtice, as the ſole inventor of this wonderful machine; the form and contrivance of which I deſired leave to delineate upon paper, as in the figure here annexed. I told him, although it were the cuſtom of our learned in *Europe* to ſteal inventions from each other, who had thereby at leaſt this advantage, that it became a controverſy which was the right owner; yet I would take ſuch caution, that he ſhould have the honour intire without a rival.

We next went to the ſchool of languages, where three profeſſors ſat in conſultation upon improving that of their own country.

The firſt project was to ſhorten diſcourſe by cutting polyſyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles; becauſe in reality all things imaginable are but nouns.

The other project was a ſcheme for intirely aboliſhing all words whatſoever; and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it is plain, that every word we ſpeak, is in ſome degree a diminution of our lungs by corroſion; and conſequently contributes to the ſhortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that ſince words are only names for *things*, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them ſuch *things* as were neceſſary to expreſs the particular buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And this invention would certainly

tainly have taken place, to the great eaſe as well as health of the ſubject, if the women in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate had not threatened to raiſe a rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed the liberty to ſpeak with their tongues after the manner of their fore-fathers, ſuch conſtant irreconcileable enemies to ſcience are the common people. However, many of the moſt learned and wiſe adhere to the new ſcheme of expreſſing themſelves by *things*; which hath only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man's buſineſs be very great and of various kinds, he muſt be obliged in proportion to carry a greater bundle of *things* upon his back, unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong ſervants to attend him. I have often beheld two of thoſe ſages almoſt ſinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlars among us; who, when they met in the ſtreets, would lay down their loads, open their ſacks, and hold converſation for an hour together; then put up their implements, help each other to reſume their burthens, and take their leave.

But for ſhort converſations a man may carry implements in his pockets and under his arms enough to ſupply him; and in his houſe he cannot be at a loſs. Therefore the room, where company meet who practiſe this art, is full of all *things* ready at hand requiſite to furniſh matter for this kind of artificial converſe.

Another great advantage propoſed by this invention was, that it would ſerve as an univerſal language to be underſtood in all civilized nations, whoſe goods and utenſils are generally of the ſame kind, or nearly reſembling, ſo that their uſes might eaſily be comprehended. And thus ambaſſadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes, or miniſters of ſtate, to whoſe tongues they were utter ſtrangers.

I was at the mathematical ſchool, where the maſter taught his pupils after a method ſcarce imaginable to us in *Europe*. The propoſition and demonſtration were fairly written on a thin wafer with ink compoſed of a cephalic tincture. This the ſtudent was to ſwallow upon a faſting ſtomach, and for three days following eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digeſted, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the propoſition along with it. But the ſucceſs hath not hitherto been anſwerable, partly by ſome error in the *quantum* or compoſition, and partly by the perverſeneſs of lads; to whom this bolus is ſo nauſeous, that they generally ſteal aſide and diſcharge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have they been yet perſuaded to uſe ſo long an abſtinence as the preſcription requires.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

A further account of the academy. The author propoſes ſome improvements, which are honourably received.

IN the ſchool of political projectors I was but ill entertained; the profeſſors appearing in my judgment wholly out of their ſenſes; which is a ſcene, that never fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy people were propoſing ſchemes for perſuading monarchs to chuſe favourites upon the ſcore of their wiſdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching miniſters to conſult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, and eminent ſervices; of inſtructing princes to know their true intereſt, by placing it on the ſame foundation with that of their people; of chuſing for employments perſons qualified to exerciſe them; with many other wild impoſſible chimæras, that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irational, which ſome philoſophers have not maintained for truth.

But however, I ſhall ſo far do juſtice to this part of the academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not ſo viſionary. There was a moſt ingenious doctor, who ſeemed to be perfectly verſed in the whole nature and ſyſtem of government. This illuſtrious perſon

had very uſefully employed his ſtudies in finding out effectual remedies for all diſeaſes and corruptions, to which the ſeveral kinds of public adminiſtration are ſubject by the vices or infirmities of thoſe who govern, as well as by the licentiouſneſs of thoſe who are to obey. For inſtance; whereas all writers and reaſoners have agreed, that there is a ſtrict univerſal reſemblance between the natural and the political body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both muſt be preſerved and the diſeaſes cured by the ſame preſcriptions? It is allowed, that ſenates and great counſels are often troubled with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours; with many diſeaſes of the head, and more of the heart; with ſtrong convulſions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and ſinews in both hands, but eſpecially the right; with ſpleen, flatus, vertigos and deliriums; with ſcrophulous tumours full of ſœtid purulent matter; with ſour frothy ructations; with canine appetites, and crudeneſs of digeſtion, beſides many others needleſs to mention. This doctor therefore propoſed, that upon the meeting of a ſenate certain phyſicians ſhould attend at the three firſt days of their ſitting, and at the cloſe of each day's debate feel the pulſes of every ſenator; after which, having maturely conſidered and conſulted upon the nature of the ſeveral maladies and the methods of cure, they ſhould on the fourth day return to the ſenate-houſe attended by their apothecaries

ſtored

ſtored with proper medicines; and before the members ſat, adminiſter to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abſterſives, corroſives, reſtringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icterics, apophlegmatics, acouſtics, as their ſeveral caſes required; and according as theſe medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next meeting.

This project could not be of any great expence to the public; and might in my poor opinion be of much uſe for the diſpatch of buſineſs in thoſe countries, where ſenates have any ſhare in the legiſlative power; beget unanimity, ſhorten debates, open a few mouths which are now cloſed, and cloſe many more which are now open; curb the petulancy of the young, and correct the poſitiveneſs of the old; rouze the ſtupid, and damp the pert.

Again; becauſe it is a general complaint, that the favourites of princes are troubled with ſhort and weak memories; the ſame doctor propoſed, that whoever attended a firſt miniſter, after having told his buſineſs with the utmoſt brevity and in the plaineſt words, ſhould at his departure give the ſaid miniſter a tweak by the noſe, or a kick on the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breech, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulneſs: and at every levee day repeat the ſame operation, till the buſineſs were done or abſolutely refuſed.

He

He likewiſe directed, that every ſenator in the great council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, ſhould be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; becauſe if that were done, the reſult would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.

When parties in a ſtate are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this: you take an hundred leaders of each party; you diſpoſe them into couples of ſuch, whoſe heads are neareſt of a ſize; then let two nice operators ſaw off the *occiput* of each couple at the ſame time in ſuch a manner, that the brain may be equally divided. Let the *occiputs* thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the head of his oppoſite party-man. It ſeems indeed to be a work that requireth ſome exactneſs, but the profeſſor aſſured us, that if it were dextrouſly performed the cure would be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two half brains being left to debate the matter between themſelves within the ſpace of one ſcull would ſoon come to a good underſtanding, and produce that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, ſo much to be wiſhed for in the heads of thoſe, who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its motion: and as to the difference of brains in quantity or quality, among thoſe who are directors in faction; the doctor aſſured us from his own knowledge, that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two profeſſors about the moſt commodious and effectual ways and means of raiſing money without grieving the ſubject. The firſt affirmed, the juſteſt method would be to lay a certain tax upon vices and folly; and the ſum fixed upon every man to be rated after the faireſt manner by a jury of his neighbours. The ſecond was of an opinion directly contrary; to tax thoſe qualities of body and mind, for which men chiefly value themſelves; the rate to be more or leſs according to the degrees of excelling; the deciſion whereof ſhould be left intirely to their own breaſt. The higheſt tax was upon men, who are the greateſt favourites of the other ſex, and the aſſeſſments according to the number and natures of the favours they have received; for which they are allowed to be their own vouchers. Wit, valour, and politeneſs were likewiſe propoſed to be largely taxed, and collected in the ſame manner, by every perſon's giving his own word for the quantum of what he poſſeſſed. But as to honour, juſtice, wiſdom, and learning, they ſhould not be taxed at all; becauſe they are qualifications of ſo ſingular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour, or value them in himſelf.

The women were propoſed to be taxed according to their beauty and ſkill in dreſſing; wherein they had the ſame privilege with the men, to be determined by their own judgment. But conſtancy, chaſtity, good ſenſe, and good

good nature were not rated, becauſe they would not bear the charge of collecting.

To keep ſenators in the intereſt of the crown it was propoſed, that the members ſhould raffle for employments; every man firſt taking an oath, and giving ſecurity, that he would vote for the court, whether he won or no; after which the loſers had in their turn the liberty of raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus hope and expectation would be kept alive; none would complain of broken promiſes, but impute their diaſappointments wholly to fortune, whoſe ſhoulders are broader and ſtronger than thoſe of a miniſtry.

Another profeſſor ſhewed me a large paper of inſtructions for diſcovering plots and conſpiracies againſt the government. He adviſed great ſtateſmen to examine into the dyet of all ſuſpected perſons; their times of eating; upon which ſide they lay in bed; with which hand they wiped their poſteriors; to take a ſtrict view of their excrements, and from the colour, the odour, the taſte, the conſiſtence, the crudeneſs, or maturity of digeſtion, form a judgment of their thoughts and deſigns. Becauſe men are never ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they are at ſtool, which he found by frequent experiment: for in ſuch conjunctures, when he uſed meerly as a trial to conſider which was the beſt way of murdering the king, his ordure would have a tincture of green; but quite different, when he thought

thought only of raiſing an inſurrection, or burning the metropolis.

The whole diſcourſe was written with great acuteneſs, containing many obſervations both curious and uſeful for politicians; but as I conceived not altogether compleat. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered if he pleaſed to ſupply him with ſome additions. He received my propoſition with more compliance, than is uſual among writers, eſpecially thoſe of the projecting ſpecies; profeſſing he would be glad to receive farther information.

I told him, that in the kingdom of *Tribnia*, by the natives called *Langdon*, where I had ſojourned ſome time in my travels, the bulk of the people conſiſt in a manner wholly of diſcoverers, witneſſes, informers, accuſers, proſecutors, evidences, ſwearers, together with their ſeveral ſubſervient and ſubaltern inſtruments, all under the colours, the conduct, and pay of miniſters of ſtate and their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are uſually the workmanſhip of thoſe perſons who deſire to raiſe their own characters of profound politicians; to reſtore new vigour to a crazy adminiſtration; to ſtifle or divert general diſcontents; to fill their coffers with forfeitures; and raiſe or ſink the opinion of public credit, as either ſhall beſt anſwer their private advantage. It is firſt agreed, and ſettled among them, what ſuſpected perſons ſhall be accuſed of a plot: then, effectual care is taken to ſecure

cure all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chains. Theſe papers are delivered to a ſett of artiſts, very dexterous in finding out the myſterious meanings of words, ſyllables, and letters: for inſtance, they can diſcover a cloſeſtool to ſignify a privy-council; a flock of geeſe, a ſenate; a lame dog [a], an invader; the plague, a ſtanding army; a buzzard, a prime miniſter; the gout, an high prieſt; a gibbet, a ſecretary of ſtate; a chamber-pot, a committee of grandees; a ſieve, a court-lady; a broom, a revolution; a mouſe-trap, an employment; a bottomleſs pit, a treaſury; a ſink, a court; a cap and bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court of juſtice; an empty tun, a general; a running ſore, the adminiſtration.

When this method fails, they have two others more effectual, which the learned among them call *acroſtics* and *anagrams*. *Firſt*, they can decypher all initial letters into political meanings. Thus, *N* ſhall ſignify a plot, *B*, a regiment of horſe, *L*, a fleet at ſea: or, *ſecondly*, by tranſpoſing the letters of the alphabet in any ſuſpected paper, they can lay open the deepeſt deſigns of a diſcontented party. So for example, if I ſhould ſay in a letter to a friend, *Our brother* Tom *has juſt got the piles*, a ſkilful decypherer would diſcover, that the ſame letters, which compoſe that ſentence, may be analyſed into the following words,

[a] See the proceedings againſt Dr. *Atterbury*, biſhop of *Rochester* State Trials, Vol. VI.

Reſiſt,

Reſiſt, —— a plot is brought home —— The tour. And this is the anagrammatic method.

The profeſſor made me great acknowledgments for communicating theſe obſervations, and promiſed to make honourable mention of me in his treatiſe.

I ſaw nothing in this country, that could invite me to a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to *England.*

CHAP. VII.

The author leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No ſhip ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to* Glubbdubdrib. *His reception by the governor.*

THE continent, of which this kingdom is a part, extends itſelf, as I have reaſon to believe, eaſtward to that unknown tract of *America* weſtward of *California,* and north to the *Pacific* ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from *Lagado;* where there is a good port, and much commerce with the great iſland of *Luggnagg,* ſituated to the north-weſt about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This iſland of *Luggnagg* ſtands ſouth-eaſtward of *Japan,* about an hundred leagues diſtant. There is a ſtrict alliance between the *Japaneſe* emperor and the king of *Luggnagg,* which affords frequent opportunities of ſailing from one iſland to the other. I determined therefore to direct my courſe this way

way in order to my return to *Europe*. I hired two mules, with a guide, to ſhew me the way, and carry my ſmall baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had ſhewn me ſo much favour, and made me a generous preſent at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of *Maldonada* (for ſo it is called) there was no ſhip in the harbour bound for *Luggnagg*, nor like to be in ſome time. The town is about as large as *Portſmouth*. I ſoon fell into ſome acquaintance, and was very hoſpitably received. A gentleman of diſtinction ſaid to me, that ſince the ſhips bound for *Luggnagg* could not be ready in leſs than a month, it might be no diſagreeable amuſement for me to take a trip to the little iſland of *Glubbdubdrib*, about five leagues off to the ſouth-weſt. He offered himſelf and a friend to accompany me, and that I ſhould be provided with a ſmall convenient barque for the voyage.

Glubbdubdrib, as nearly as I can interpret the word, ſignifies the iſland of *ſorcerers* or *magicians*. It is about one third as large as the *Iſle of Wight*, and extremely fruitful: it is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marries only among each other, and the eldeſt in ſucceſſion is prince or governor. He hath a noble palace, and a park of about three thouſand acres, ſurrounded by a wall of hewn ſtone twenty feet high. In this park are ſeveral

ſmall

ſmall incloſures for cattle, corn, and gardening.

The governor and his family are ſerved and attended by domeſtics of a kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his ſkill in necromancy he hath a power of calling whom he pleaſeth from the dead, and commanding their ſervice for twenty-four hours, but no longer; nor can he call the ſame perſons up again in leſs than three months, except upon very extraordinary occaſions.

When we arrived at the iſland, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen, who accompanied me, went to the governor, and deſired admittance for a ſtranger, who came on purpoſe to have the honour of attending on his highneſs. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the gate of the palace, between two rows of guards armed and dreſſed after a very antic manner, and ſomething in their countenances that made my fleſh creep with a horror I cannot expreſs. We paſſed through ſeveral apartments between ſervants of the ſame ſort ranked on each ſide, as before, till we came to the chamber of preſence, where, after three profound obeyſances and a few general queſtions, we were permitted to ſit on three ſtools near the loweſt ſtep of his highneſs's throne. He underſtood the language of *Balnibarbi*, although it were different from that of this iſland. He deſired me to give him ſome account of my travels; and, to let me ſee that I ſhould be treated without ceremony, he diſ-

miſſed all his attendants with a turn of his finger, at which to my great aſtoniſhment they vaniſhed in an inſtant, like viſions in a dream, when we awake on a ſudden. I could not recover myſelf in ſome time, till the governor aſſured me, that I ſhould receive no hurt; and obſerving my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the ſame manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highneſs a ſhort hiſtory of my ſeveral adventures; yet not without ſome heſitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place, where I had ſeen thoſe domeſtic ſpectres. I had the honour to dine with the governor, where a new ſett of ghoſts ſerved up the meat, and waited at table. I now obſerved myſelf to be leſs terrified, than I had been in the morning. I ſtayed till ſun-ſet, but humbly deſired his highneſs to excuſe me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private houſe in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little iſland; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the governor, as he was pleaſed to command us.

After this manner we continued in the iſland for ten days, moſt part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I ſoon grew ſo familiarized to the ſight of ſpirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all; or if I had any apprehenſions left, my curioſity prevailed over them. For his highneſs the governor ordered me to call

call up whatever perſons I would chuſe to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead from the beginning of the world to the preſent time, and command them to anſwer any queſtions I ſhould think fit to aſk; with this condition, that my queſtions muſt be confined within the compaſs of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth, for lying was a talent of no uſe in the lower world. I made my humble acknowledgments to his highneſs for ſo great a favour. We were in a chamber, from whence there was a fair proſpect into the park. And, becauſe my firſt inclination was to be entertained with ſcenes of pomp and magnificence, I deſired to ſee *Alexander the Great* at the head of his army juſt after the battle of *Arbela*, which, upon a motion of the governor's finger, immediately appeared in a large field under the window, where we ſtood. *Alexander* was called up into the room: it was with great difficulty that I underſtood his *Greek* [a], and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a fever by exceſſive drinking [b].

[a] An hint from *Gulliver*, that we have loſt the true *Greek* idiom. ORRERY.

[b] In this paſſage there is a peculiar beauty, though it is not diſcovered at an haſty view. The appearance of *Alexander* with a victorious army immediately after the battle of *Arbela* produced only a declaration that he died by drunkenneſs; thus inadequate and ridiculous in the eye of reaſon is the ultimate purpoſe for which *Alexander* with his army marched into a remote country, ſubverted a mighty empire, and

Next I ſaw *Hannibal* paſſing the *Alps*, who told me, he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp [a].

I ſaw *Cæſar* and *Pompey* at the head of their troops juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the former in his laſt great triumph. I deſired, that the ſenate of *Rome* might appear before me in one large chamber, and a modern repreſentative in counterview in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an aſſembly of heroes and demy-gods, the other a knot of pedlars, pick-pockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

The governor at my requeſt gave the ſign for *Cæſar* and *Brutus* to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound veneration at the ſight of *Brutus*, and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate virtue, the greateſt intrepidity and firmneſs of mind, the trueſt love of his country, and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I obſerved with much pleaſure, that theſe two perſons were in good intelligence with each other; and *Cæſar* freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt actions of his own life were not equal by many degrees to the glory of taking

and deluged a nation with blood; he gained no more than an epithet to his name, which after a few repetitions was no longer regarded even by himſelf: thus the purpoſe of his reſurrection appears to be at leaſt equally important with that of his life, upon which it is a ſatire not more bitter than juſt.

[a] *Livy* the *Roman* hiſtorian has related, that *Hannibal* burnt a great pile of wood upon a rock that ſtopped his paſſage, and when it was thus heated poured *vinegar* upon it, by which it was made ſo ſoft as to be eaſily cut through.

it

it away. I had the honour to have much converſation with *Brutus*; and was told, that his anceſtor *Junius*, *Socrates*, *Epaminondas*, *Cato* the younger [a], Sir *Thomas More*, and himſelf were perpetually together: a *ſextumvirate*, to which all the ages of the world cannot add a ſeventh.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating, what vaſt numbers of illuſtrious perſons were called up to gratify that inſatiable deſire I had to ſee the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine eyes with beholding the deſtroyers of tyrants and uſurpers, and the reſtorers of liberty to oppreſſed and injured nations. But it is impoſſible to expreſs the ſatisfaction I received in my own mind, after ſuch a manner as to make it a ſuitable entertainment to the reader.

[a] I am in ſome doubt whether *Cato* the *cenſor* can fairly claim a rank among ſo choice a group of ghoſts. ORRERY.

This note of his lordſhip is an encomium on the judgment of our author, who knew that *Cato* the *cenſor* and *Cato* the *younger* were very different perſons, and for good reaſons preferred the *latter*.

CHAP. VIII.

A further account of Glubbdubdrib. *Ancient and modern history corrected.*

HAving a deſire to ſee thoſe ancients, who were moſt renowned for wit and learning, I ſet apart one day on purpoſe. I propoſed that *Homer* and *Ariſtotle* might appear at the head of all their commentators; but theſe were ſo numerous, that ſome hundreds were forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the palace. I knew and could diſtinguiſh thoſe two heroes at firſt ſight, not only from the croud, but from each other. *Homer* was the taller and comlier perſon of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the moſt quick and piercing I ever beheld. *Ariſtotle* ſtooped much, and made uſe of a ſtaff. His viſage was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow [a]. I ſoon diſcovered that both of them were perfect ſtrangers to the reſt of the company, and had never ſeen or heard of them before. And

[a] This deſcription of *Ariſtotle* is fine, and in a few words repreſents the true nature of his works. By not having the immortal ſpirit of *Homer*, he was unable to keep his body erect; and his ſtaff which feebly ſupported him, like his commentators, made this defect more conſpicuous. He wanted not ſome uſeful qualities, but theſe *real ornaments* like his hair were thin and *ungraceful*. ORRERY.

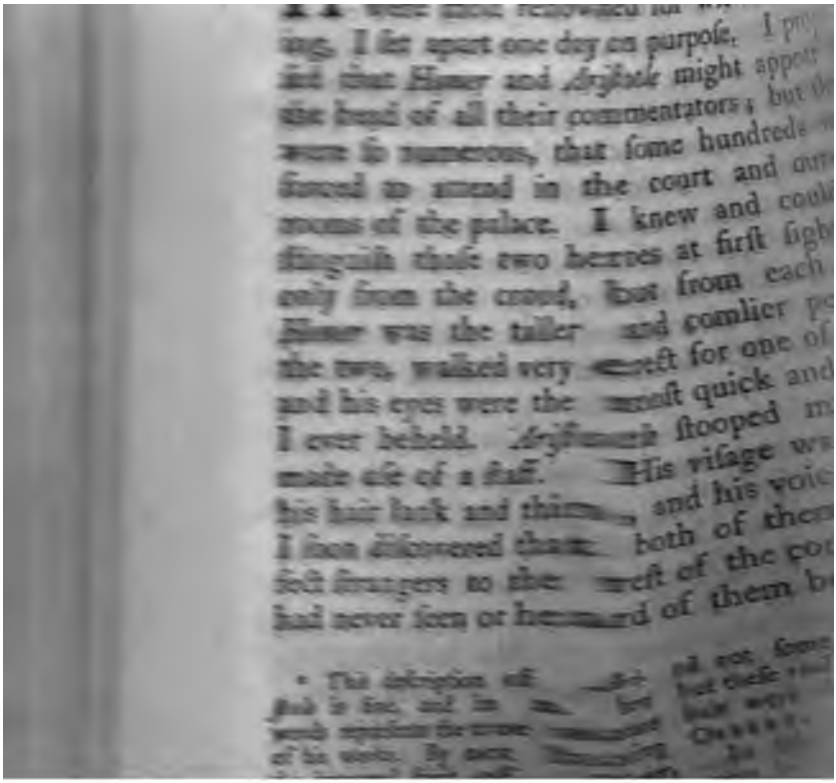
In this the noble commentator ſeems to be miſtaken, for it cannot be believed that *Ariſtotle's real ornaments* however few were *ungraceful*.

I had

I had a whiſper from a ghoſt, who ſhall be nameleſs, that theſe commentators always kept in the moſt diſtant quarters from their principals in the lower world, through a conſciouſneſs of ſhame and guilt, becauſe they had ſo horribly miſrepreſented the meaning of thoſe authors to poſterity. I introduced *Didymus* and *Euſtathius* to *Homer*, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deſerved, for he ſoon found they wanted a genius to enter into the ſpirit of a poet. But *Ariſtotle* was out of all patience with the account I gave him of *Scotus* and *Ramus*, as I preſented them to him, and he aſked them whether the reſt of the tribe were as great dunces as themſelves.

I then deſired the governor to call up *Deſcartes* and *Gaſſendi*[a], with whom I prevailed to explain their ſyſtems to *Ariſtotle*. This great philoſopher freely acknowledged his own miſtakes in natural philoſophy, becauſe he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men muſt do; and he found, that *Gaſſendi*, who had made the doctrine of *Epicurus* as palatable as he could, and the *vortices* of *Deſcartes* were equally to be exploded. He predicted the ſame fate to *attraction*, whereof the preſent learned are ſuch zealous aſſerters. He ſaid,

[a] *Gaſſendi* was eſteemed one of the greateſt ornaments of *France*; he was a doctor of divinity and royal profeſſor of mathematics; he was born in *Provence* in 1592, and died in 1655. With great induſtry he collected whatever related to the perſon and to the philoſophy of *Epicurus*, the latter of which he has reduced into a compleat Syſtem. ORRERY.



c, I was
was not
d myſelf
y which
to their
er, from
n, why a
for two
; why a
d, and a
me what
eat houſe,
cruelty,
character-
re diſtin-
of arms;
ble houſe,
crophulous
her could I
h an inter-
queys, valets,
ers, captains,

modern hiſtory.
l the perſons of
princes for an
how the world
writers to aſcribe
to cowards, the
erity to flatterers,
their country, pi-
ſodomites, truth to
nocent and excellent
perſons

that new ſyſtems of nature were but new faſhions, which would vary in every age; and even thoſe, who pretend to demonſtrate them from mathematical principles, would flouriſh but a ſhort period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.

I ſpent five days in converſing with many others of the ancient learned. I ſaw moſt of the firſt *Roman* emperors. I prevailed on the governor to call up *Eliogabalus*'s cooks to dreſs us a dinner, but they could not ſhew us much of their ſkill for want of materials. A *helot* of *Ageſilaus* made us a diſh of *Spartan* broth, but I was not able to get down a ſecond ſpoonful.

The two gentlemen, who conducted me to the iſland, were preſſed by their private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in ſeeing ſome of the modern dead, who had made the greateſt figure for two or three hundred years paſt in our own and other countries of *Europe*; and having been always a great admirer of old illuſtrious families, I deſired the governor would call up a dozen or two of kings, with their anceſtors in order for eight or nine generations. But my diſappointment was grievous and unexpected. For, inſtead of a long train with royal diadems, I ſaw in one family two fidlers, three ſpruce courtiers, and an *Italian* prelate. In another, a barber, an abbot, and two cardinals. I have too great a veneration for crowned heads to dwell any longer on ſo nice a ſubject. But as to counts, mar-

marqueſſes, dukes, earls, and the like, I was not ſo ſcrupulous. And, I confeſs, it was not without ſome pleaſure, that I found myſelf able trace the particular features, by which certain families are diſtinguiſhed up, to their originals. I could plainly diſcover, from whence one family derives a long chin, why a ſecond hath abounded with knaves for two generations, and fools for two more; why a third happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to be ſharpers; whence it came what *Polydore Virgil* ſays of a certain great houſe, *Nec vir fortis, nec fœmina caſta*; how cruelty, falſhood, and cowardice grew to be characteriſtics, by which certain families are diſtinguiſhed as much as by their coats of arms; who firſt brought the pox into a noble houſe, which hath lineally deſcended in ſcrophulous tumours to their poſterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I ſaw ſuch an interruption of lineages by pages, lacqueys, valets, coachmen, gameſters, fidlers, players, captains, and pick-pockets.

I was chiefly diſguſted with modern hiſtory. For having ſtrictly examined all the perſons of greateſt name in the courts of princes for an hundred years paſt, I found how the world had been miſled by proſtitute writers to aſcribe the greateſt exploits in war to cowards, the wiſeſt counſel to fools, ſincerity to flatterers, *roman* virtue to betrayers of their country, piety to atheiſts, chaſtity to ſodomites, truth to informers: how many innocent and excellent

perſons

perſons had been condemned to death or baniſhment by the practiſing of great miniſters upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions: how many villains had been exalted to the higheſt places of truſt, power, dignity, and profit: how great a ſhare in the motions and events of courts, councils, and ſenates, might be challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, paraſites, and buffoons: how low an opinion I had of human wiſdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the ſprings and motives of great enterprizes and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their ſucceſs.

Here I diſcovered the roguery and ignorance of thoſe, who pretend to write *anecdotes*, or ſecret hiſtory; who ſend ſo many kings to their graves with a cup of poiſon; will repeat the diſcourſe between a prince and chief miniſter, where no witneſs was by; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambaſſadors and ſecretaries of ſtate; and have the perpetal misfortune to be miſtaken. Here I diſcovered the true cauſes of many great events that have ſurpriſed the world; how a whore can govern the back-ſtairs, the back-ſtairs a council, and the council a ſenate. A general confeſſed in my preſence, that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct: and an admiral, that for want of proper intelligence he beat the enemy, to whom he intended to betray the fleet. Three kings proteſted to me, that in their whole reigns they never did

did once prefer any perſon of merit, unleſs by miſtake, or treachery of ſome miniſter in whom they confided: neither would they do it if they were to live again; and they ſhewed with great ſtrength of reaſon, that the royal throne could not be ſupported without corruption, becauſe that poſitive, confident, reſtive temper, which virtue infuſed into a man, was a perpetual clog to public buſineſs.

I had the curioſity to enquire in a particular manner, by what method great numbers had procured to themſelves high titles of honour and prodigious eſtates; and I confined my enquiry to a very modern period, however without grating upon preſent times, becauſe I would be ſure to give no offence even to foreigners; for I hope the reader need not to be told, that I do not in the leaſt intend my own country in what I ſay upon this occaſion. A great number of perſons concerned were called up, and upon a very ſlight examination diſcovered ſuch a ſcene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without ſome ſerioufneſs. Perjury, oppreſſion, ſubornation, fraud, pandariſm, and the like *infirmities* were amongſt the moſt excuſable arts they had to mention; and for theſe I gave, as it was reaſonable, great allowance. But when ſome confeſſed they owed their greatneſs and wealth to ſodomy, or inceſt; others to the proſtituting of their own wives and daughters; others to the betraying their country or their prince; ſome to poiſoning, more to the perverting of

juſtice in order to deſtroy the innocent: I hope I may be pardoned, if theſe diſcoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay to perſons of high rank, who ought to be treated with the utmoſt reſpect due to their ſublime dignity by us their inferiors.

I had often read of ſome great ſervices done to princes and ſtates, and deſired to ſee the perſons, by whom thoſe ſervices were performed. Upon enquiry I was told, that their names were to be found on no record, except a few of them, whom hiſtory hath repreſented as the vileſt rogues and traitors. As to the reſt, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meaneſt habit, moſt of them telling me they died in poverty and diſgrace, and the reſt on a ſcaffold or a gibbet.

Among others there was one perſon, whoſe caſe appeared a little ſingular. He had a youth about eighteen years old ſtanding by his ſide. He told me he had for many years been commander of a ſhip; and in the ſea fight at *Actium*, had the good fortune to break through the enemies great line of battle, ſink three of their capital ſhips, and take a fourth, which was the ſole cauſe of *Anthony*'s flight, and of the victory that enſued; that the youth ſtanding by him, his only ſon, was killed in the action. He added, that upon the confidence of ſome merit, the war being at an end, he went to *Rome*, and ſollicited at the court of *Auguſtus*

Auguſtus to be preferred to a greater ſhip, whoſe commander had been killed; but without any regard to his pretenſions it was given to a boy, who had never ſeen the ſea, the ſon of *Libertina*, who waited on one of the emperor's miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own veſſel he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ſhip given to a favourite page of *Publicola*, the vice-admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great diſtance from *Rome*, and there ended his life. I was ſo curious to know the truth of this ſtory, that I deſired *Agrippa* might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, but with much more advantage to the captain, whoſe modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was ſurpriſed to find corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that empire, by the force of luxury ſo lately introduced, which made me leſs wonder at many parallel caſes in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole praiſe, as well as pillage, hath been engroſſed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the leaſt title to either.

As every perſon called up made exactly the ſame appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to obſerve, how much the race of human kind was degenerated among us within theſe hundred years paſt. How the pox under all its conſequen-

ces

ces and denominations had altered every lineament of an *engliſh* countenance: ſhortened the ſize of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the ſinews and muſcles, introduced a ſallow complexion, and rendered the fleſh looſe and *rancid*.

I deſcended ſo low as to deſire, that ſome *engliſh* yeomen of the old ſtamp, might be ſummoned to appear; once ſo famous for the ſimplicity of their manners, diet, and dreſs; for juſtice in their dealings; for their true ſpirit of liberty; for their valour and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the living with the dead, when I conſidered how all theſe pure native virtues were proſtituted for a piece of money by their grand-children, who in ſelling their votes, and managing at elections, have acquired every vice and corruption that can poſſibly be learned in a court.

CHAP. IX.

The author returns to Maldonada. *Sails to the kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The author confined. He is ſent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The king's great lenity to his ſubjects.*

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his highneſs, the governor of *Glubbdubdribb*, and returned with my two companions to *Maldanada*, where after a fortnight's waiting, a ſhip was ready to ſail for *Luggnagg*. The two gentlemen, and ſome others,

thers, were ſo generous and kind as to furniſh me with proviſions, and ſee me on board. I was a month in this voyage. We had one violent ſtorm, and were under a neceſſity of ſteering weſtward to get into the trade-wind, which holds for above ſixty leagues. On the 21ſt of *April*, 1708, we ſailed into the river of *Clumegnig*, which is a ſea-port town, at the ſouth-eaſt point of *Luggnagg*. We caſt anchor within a league of the town, and made a ſignal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in leſs than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain ſhoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the paſſage, to a large baſin, where a fleet may ride in ſafety within a cable's length of the town wall.

Some of our ſailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots that I was a ſtranger and a great traveller; whereof theſe gave notice to a cuſtom-houſe officer, by whom I was examined very ſtrictly upon my landing. This officer ſpoke to me in the language of *Balnibarbi*, which by the force of much commerce is generally underſtood in that town, eſpecially by ſea-men, and thoſe employed in the cuſtoms. I gave him a ſhort account of ſome particulars, and made my ſtory as plauſible and conſiſtent as I could; but I thought it neceſſary to diſguiſe my country, and call myſelf an *Hollander*, becauſe my intentions were for *Japan*, and I knew the *Dutch* were the only *Europeans* permitted to enter into that kingdom. I therefore

fore told the officer, that having been ſhipwrecked on the coaſt of *Balnibarbi*, and caſt on a rock, I was received up into *Laputa*, or the flying iſland (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavouring to get to *Japan*, from whence I might find a convenience of returning to my own country. The officer ſaid, I muſt be confined till he could receive orders from court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an anſwer in a fortnight. I was carried to a convenient lodging with a centry placed at the door; however, I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the king's charge. I was invited by ſeveral perſons, chiefly out of curioſity, becauſe it was reported that I came from countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the ſame ſhip, to be an interpreter; he was a native of *Luggnagg*, but had lived ſome years at *Maldonada*, and was a perfect maſter of both languages. By his aſſiſtance I was able to hold a converſation with thoſe who came to viſit me; but this conſiſted only of their queſtions and my anſwers.

The diſpatch came from court about the time we expected. It contained a warrant for conducting me and my retinue to *Traldragdubb*, or *Trildrogdrib*, for it is pronounced both ways, as near as I can remember, by a party of ten horſe. All my retinue was that poor lad

had for an interpreter, whom I perſuaded into my ſervice, and at my humble requeſt we had each of us a mule to ride on. A meſſenger was diſpatched half a day's journey before us to give the king notice of my approach, and to deſire that his majeſty would pleaſe to appoint a day and hour, when it would be his gracious pleaſure, that I might have the honour to *lick the duſt before his foot-ſtool.* This is the court ſtyle, and I found it to be more than matter of form. For, upon my admittance two days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl upon my belly, and lick the floor as I advanced; but on account of my being a ſtranger care was taken to have it made ſo clean, that the duſt was not offenſive. However, this was a peculiar grace, not allowed to any but perſons of the higheſt rank, when they deſire an admittance. Nay, ſometimes the floor is ſtrewed with duſt on purpoſe, when the perſon to be admittted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have ſeen a great lord with his mouth ſo crammed, that, when he had crept to the proper diſtance from the throne, he was not able to ſpeak a word. Neither is there any remedy; becauſe it is capital for thoſe, who receive an audience, to ſpit or wipe their mouths in his majeſty's preſence. There is indeed another cuſtom which I cannot altogether approve of: when the king hath a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle, indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be ſtrewed with a certain brown

powder of a deadly compoſition, which being licked up infallibly kills him in twenty-four hours. But in juſtice to this prince's great clemency, and the care he hath of his ſubjects lives (wherein it were much to be wiſhed, that the monarchs of *Europe* would imitate him) it muſt be mentioned for his honour, that ſtrict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well waſhed after every ſuch execution; which if his domeſtics neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal diſpleaſure. I myſelf heard him give directions, that one of his pages ſhould be whipt, whoſe turn it was to give notice about waſhing the floor after an execution, but maliciouſly had omitted it, by which neglect a young lord of great hopes coming to an audience was unfortunately poiſoned, although the king at that time had no deſign againſt his life. But this good prince was ſo gracious, as to forgive the poor page his whipping upon promiſe, that he would do ſo no more without ſpecial orders.

To return from this digreſſion; when I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raiſed myſelf gently upon my knees, and then, ſtriking my forehead ſeven times againſt the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before, *Ickpling gloffthrobb ſquut ſerumm blhiop mlaſhnalt zwin tnodbalkuffhſlhiophad gurdlubh aſht.* This is the compliment eſtabliſhed by the laws of the land for all perſons admitted to the king's preſence. It may be rendered into *Engliſh* thus: *May your*

your cæleſtial majeſty out-live the ſun, eleven moons and a half. To this the king returned ſome anſwer, which although I could not underſtand, yet I replied as I had been directed: *Flute drin yalerick dwuldom praſtrad mirpuſh*, which properly ſignifies, *My tongue is in the mouth of my friend*; and by this expreſſion was meant, that I deſired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whoſe intervention I anſwered as many queſtions, as his majeſty could put in above an hour. I ſpoke in the *Balnibarbian* tongue, and my interpreter delivered my meaning in that of *Luggnagg*.

The king was much delighted with my company, and ordered his *Bliffmarklub*, or high chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter, with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purſe of gold for my common expences.

I ſtayed three months in this country out of perfect obedience to his majeſty, who was pleaſed highly to favour me, and made me very honourable offers. But I thought it more conſiſtent with prudence and juſtice to paſs the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnuggians *commended. A particular deſcription of the* Struldbrugs, *with many converſations between the author and ſome eminent perſons upon that ſubject.*

THE *Luggnuggians* are a polite and generous people; and although they are not without ſome ſhare of that pride, which is peculiar to all *eaſtern* countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to ſtrangers, eſpecially ſuch who are countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintance among perſons of the beſt faſhion, and being always attended by my interpreter, the converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

One day, in much good company, I was aſked by a perſon of quality, whether I had ſeen any of their *ſtruldbrugs* or *immortals*. I ſaid, I had not; and deſired he would explain to me, what he meant by ſuch an appellation applied to a mortal creature. He told me, that ſometimes, though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular ſpot in the forehead directly over the left eyebrow, which was an infallible mark, that it ſhould never die. The ſpot, as he deſcribed it, was about the compaſs of a ſilver threepence, but in the courſe of time grew larger, and changed its colour; for at twelve years old it became green, ſo continued till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue; at five

and

and forty it grew coal black, and as large as an *engliſh* ſhilling; but never admitted any farther alteration. He ſaid, theſe births were ſo rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred *ſtruldbrugs* of both ſexes in the whole kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the metropolis, and among the reſt a young girl born about three years ago: that theſe productions were not peculiar to any family, but a meer effect of chance; and the children of the *ſtruldbrugs* themſelves were equally mortal with the reſt of the people.

I freely own myſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſſible delight upon hearing this account: and the perſon, who gave it me, happening to underſtand the *Balnibarbian* language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into expreſſions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out, as in a rapture: Happy nation, where every child hath at leaſt a chance for being immortal! Happy people, who enjoy ſo many living examples of ancient virtue, and have maſters ready to inſtruct them in the wiſdom of all former ages! but, happieſt beyond all compariſon, are thoſe excellent *ſtruldbrugs*, who being born exempt from that univerſal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and diſengaged, without the weight and depreſſion of ſpirits cauſed by the continual apprehenſion of death. I diſcovered my admiration, that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious perſons at court; the black ſpot on the forehead being

ſo remarkable a diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily overlooked it: and it was impoſſible that his majeſty, a moſt judicious prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good number of ſuch wiſe and able counſellors. Yet perhaps the virtue of thoſe reverend ſages was too ſtrict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And we often find by experience, that young men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the ſober dictates of their ſeniors. However, ſince the king was pleaſed to allow me acceſs to his royal perſon, I was reſolved, upon the very firſt occaſion, to deliver my opinion to him on this matter freely and at large by the help of my interpreter; and whether he would pleaſe to take my advice or no, yet in one thing I was determined, that, his majeſty having frequently offered me an eſtabliſhment in this country, I would with great thankfulneſs accept the favour, and paſs my life here in the converſation of thoſe ſuperior beings, the *ſtruldbrugs*, if they would pleaſe to admit me.

The gentleman, to whom I addreſſed my diſcourſe, becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke the language of *Balnibarbi*, ſaid to me with a ſort of a ſmile, which uſually ariſeth from pity to the ignorant, that he was glad of any occaſion to keep me among them, and deſired my permiſſion to explain to the company what I had ſpoke. He did ſo, and they talked together for ſome time in their own language, whereof I underſtood not a

ſyllable, neither could I obſerve by their countenances, what impreſſion my diſcourſe had made on them. After a ſhort ſilence the ſame perſon told me, that his friends and mine (ſo he thought fit to expreſs himſelf) were very much pleaſed with the judicious remarks I had made on the great happineſs and advantages of immortal life, and they were deſirous to know in a particular manner, what ſcheme of living I ſhould have formed to myſelf, if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a *ſtruldbrug*.

I anſwered, it was eaſy to be eloquent on ſo copious and delightful a ſubject, eſpecially to me, who had been often apt to amuſe myſelf with viſions of what I ſhould do, if I were a king, a general, or a great lord: and, upon this very caſe, I had frequently run over the whole ſyſtem how I ſhould employ myſelf, and paſs the time, if I were ſure to live for ever.

That, if it had been my good fortune to come into the world a *ſtruldbrug*, as ſoon as I could diſcover my own happineſs by underſtanding the difference between life and death, I would firſt reſolve by all arts and methods whatſoever to procure myſelf riches. In the purſuit of which by thrift and management, I might reaſonably expect in about two hundred years to be the wealthieſt man in the kingdom. In the ſecond place, I would from my earlieſt youth apply myſelf to the ſtudy of arts and ſciences, by which I ſhould arrive in

time to excel all others in learning. Laſtly, I would carefully record every action and event of conſequence that happened in the public, impartially draw the characters of the ſeveral ſucceſſions of princes and great miniſters of ſtate, with my own obſervations on every point. I would exactly ſet down the ſeveral changes in cuſtoms, language, faſhions of dreſs, diet, and diverſions. By all which acquirements I ſhould be a living treaſury of knowledge and wiſdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threeſcore, but live in an hoſpitable manner, yet ſtill on the ſaving ſide. I would entertain myſelf in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them from my own remembrance, experience and obſervation, fortified by numerous examples, of the uſefulneſs of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and conſtant companions ſhould be a ſett of my own immortal brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the moſt ancient down to my own contemporaries. Where any of theſe wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own eſtate, and have ſome of them always at my table, only mingling a few of the moſt valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would harden me to loſe with little or no reluctance, and treat your poſterity after the ſame manner; juſt as a man diverts himſelf with the annual ſucceſſion of pinks and tulips

in

in his garden, without regretting the loſs of thoſe, which withered the preceding year.

Theſe *ſtruldbrugs* and I would mutually communicate our obſervations, and memorials through the courſe of time; remark the ſeveral gradations by which corruption ſteals into the world, and oppoſe it in every ſtep by giving perpetual warning and inſtruction to mankind; which, added to the ſtrong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature ſo juſtly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this the pleaſure of ſeeing the various revolutions of ſtates and empires; the changes in the lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins, and obſcure villages become the ſeats of kings; famous rivers leſſening into ſhallow brooks; the ocean leaving one coaſt dry, and overwhelming another; the diſcovery of many countries yet unknown. Barbarity overrunning the politeſt nations, and the moſt barbarous become civilized. I ſhould then ſee the diſcovery of the *longitude*, the *perpetual motion*, the *univerſal medicine*, and many other great inventions brought to the utmoſt perfection.

What wonderful diſcoveries ſhould we make in aſtronomy by out-living and confirming our own predictions, by obſerving the progreſs and returns of comets, with the changes of motion in the ſun, moon, and ſtars.

I enlarged upon many other topics, which the natural deſire of endleſs life and ſublunary hap-

happineſs could eaſily furniſh me with. When I had ended, and the ſum of my diſcourſe had been interpreted, as before, to the reſt of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without ſome laughter at my expence. At laſt the ſame gentleman, who had been my interpreter, ſaid he was deſired by the reſt to ſet me right in a few miſtakes, which I had fallen into through the common imbecillity of human nature, and upon that allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That this breed of *ſtruldbrugs* was peculiar to their country, for there were no ſuch people either in *Balnibarbi* or *Japan*, where he had the honour to be ambaſſador from his majeſty, and found the natives in both thoſe kingdoms very hard to believe, that the fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my aſtoniſhment, when he firſt mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his reſidence he had converſed very much, he obſerved long life to be the univerſal deſire and wiſh of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That the oldeſt had ſtill hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death as the greateſt evil, from which nature always prompted him to retreat; only in this iſland of *Luggnagg* the appetite for living was not ſo eager,

from

from the continual example of the *ſtruldbrugs* before their eyes.

That the ſyſtem of living contrived by me was unreaſonable and unjuſt; becauſe it ſuppoſed a perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour, which no man could be ſo fooliſh to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wiſhes [a]. That the queſtion therefore was not, whether a man would chuſe to be always in the prime of youth, attended with proſperity and health; but how he would paſs a perpetual life under all the uſual diſadvantages, which old age brings along with it. For although few men will avow their deſires of being immortal upon ſuch hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned, of *Balnibarbi* and *Japan*, he obſerved that every man deſired to put off death for ſome time longer, let it approach ever ſo late; and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were incited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me, whether in thoſe countries I had travelled, as well as my own, I had not obſerved the ſame general diſpoſition [b].

After

[a] To this it may poſſibly be objected, that the perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour would be leſs a prodigy than the perpetuity of life in a body ſubject to gradual decay, and might therefore be hoped without greater extravagance of folly; but the ſentiment here expreſſed, is that of a being to whom immortality though not perpetual youth was familiar, and in whom the wiſh of perpetual youth only would have been extravagant, becauſe that only appeared from facts to be impoſſible.

[b] If it be ſaid, that although the folly of deſiring life to be prolonged under the diſadvantages of old age is here finely ex-

After this preface he gave me a particular account of the *ſtruldbrugs* among them. He ſaid, they commonly acted like mortals, till about thirty years old, after which by degrees they grew melancholy and dejected, encreaſing in both till they came to fourſcore. This he learned from their own confeſſion; for otherwiſe, there not being above two or three of that ſpecies born in an age, they were too few to form a general obſervation by. When they came to fourſcore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more, which aroſe from the dreadful proſpect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peeviſh, covetous, moroſe, vain, talkative; but incapable of friendſhip, and dead to all natural affection, which never deſcended below their grandchildren. Envy and impotent deſires are their prevailing paſſions. But thoſe objects, againſt which their envy ſeems principally directed, are the vices of the younger ſort, and the

expoſed; yet the deſire of terreſtrial immortality upon terms, on which alone in the nature of things it is poſſible, an exemption from diſeaſe, accident and decay, is tacitly allowed. It may be anſwered, that as we grow old by imperceptible degrees, ſo for the moſt part we grow old without repining, and every man is ready to profeſs himſelf willing to die, when he ſhall be overtaken by the decripitude of age in ſome future period; yet when every other eye ſees that this period is arrived, he is ſtill tenacious of life, and murmurs at the condition upon which he received his exiſtence: to reconcile old age therefore to the thoughts of a diſſolution appears to be all that was neceſſary in a moral writer for practical purpoſes.

deaths

deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former they find themſelves cut off from all poſſibility of pleaſure; and whenever they ſee a funeral, they lament and repine that others are gone to an harbour of reſt, to which they themſelves never can hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of any thing, but what they learned and obſerved in their youth and middle age, and even that is very imperfect. And for the truth or particulars of any fact it is ſafer to depend on common tradition, than upon their beſt recollections. The leaſt miſerable among them appear to be thoſe, who turn to dotage, and intirely loſe their memories; theſe meet with more pity and aſſiſtance, becauſe they want many bad qualities, which abound in others.

If a *ſtruldbrug* happen to marry one of his own kind, the marriage is diſſolved of courſe by the courteſy of the kingdom, as ſoon as the younger of the two comes to be fourſcore. For the law thinks it a reaſonable indulgence, that thoſe, who are condemned without any fault of their own to a perpetual continuance in the world, ſhould not have their miſery doubled by the load of a wife.

As ſoon as they have compleated the term of eighty years, they are looked on as dead in law; their heirs immediately ſucceed to their eſtates, only a ſmall pittance is reſerved for their ſupport; and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period they are held incapable of any employment of

truſt or profit; they cannot purchaſe lands, or take leaſes; neither are they allowed to be witneſſes in any cauſe, either civil or criminal, not even for the deciſion of meers and bounds.

At ninety they loſe their teeth and hair; they have at that age no diſtinction of taſte, but eat and drink whatever they can get without reliſh or appetite. The diſeaſes they were ſubject to ſtill continue, without encreaſing or diminiſhing. In talking they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of perſons, even of thoſe who are their neareſt friends and relations. For the ſame reaſon they never can amuſe themſelves with reading, becauſe their memory will not ſerve to carry them from the beginning of a ſentence to the end; and by this defect they are deprived of the only entertainment, whereof they might otherwiſe be capable.

The language of this country being always upon the flux, the *ſtruldbrugs* of one age do not underſtand thoſe of another; neither are they able after two hundred years to hold any converſation (farther than by a few general words) with their neighbours, the mortals; and thus they lie under the diſadvantage of living like foreigners in their own country.

This was the account given me of the *ſtruldbrugs*, as near as I can remember. I afterwards ſaw five or ſix of different ages, the youngeſt not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at ſeveral times by ſome of my friends; but although they were told, that I

was

was a great traveller, and had ſeen all the world, they had not the leaſt curioſity to aſk me a queſtion; only deſired I would give them *ſlumſkudaſk*, or a token of remembrance; which is a modeſt way of begging, to avoid the law, that ſtrictly forbids it, becauſe they are provided for by the public, although indeed with a very ſcanty allowance.

They are deſpiſed and hated by all ſorts of people; when one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their age by conſulting the regiſter; which however hath not been kept above a thouſand years paſt, or at leaſt hath been deſtroyed by time or public diſturbances. But the uſual way of computing how old they are, is, by aſking them what kings or great perſons they can remember, and then conſulting hiſtory; for infallibly the laſt prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourſcore years old.

They were the moſt mortifying ſight I ever beheld; and the women more horrible than men. Beſides the uſual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghaſtlineſs in proportion to their number of years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a dozen I ſoon diſtinguiſhed, which was the eldeſt, although there was not above a century or two between them.

The reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen appetite for

for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing viſions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death, into which I would not run with pleaſure from ſuch a life. The king heard of all that had paſſed between me and my friends upon this occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly; wiſhing I could ſend a couple of *ſtruldbrugs* to my own country to arm our people againſt the fear of death [a], but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or elſe I ſhould have been well content with the trouble and expence of tranſporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of this kingdom relating to the *ſtruldbrugs* were founded upon the ſtrongeſt reaſons, and ſuch as any other country would be under the neceſſity of enacting in the like circumſtances. Otherwiſe as avarice is the neceſſary conſequent of old age, thoſe immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engroſs the civil power; which for want of abilities to manage, muſt end in the ruin of the public.

[a] Perhaps it may not be wholly uſeleſs to remark, that the ſight of a *Struldbrug* would no otherwiſe arm thoſe againſt the fear of death, who have no hope beyond it, than a man is armed againſt the fear of breaking his limbs, who jumps out of a window when his houſe is on fire.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England.

I Thought this account of the *ſtruldbrugs* might be ſome entertainment to the reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common way; at leaſt I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels, that hath come to my hands: and if I am deceived my excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary [a] for travellers, who deſcribe the ſame country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, without deſerving the cenſure of having borowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of *Japan*; and it is very probable, that the *Japaneſe* authors may have given ſome account of the *ſtruldbrugs*; but my ſtay in *Japan* was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo intirely a ſtranger to the language, that I was not qualified to make any

[a] The word *neceſſary* is here uſed in the ſame manner, as when by the idiom of our language it means *convenient*, though it is to be underſtood in its proper and original ſignification. "Travellers who deſcribe the ſame country very often *neceſſarily* agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, and therefore *do not deſerve* the cenſure of having borrowed, *&c.*"

enquiries. But I hope the *Dutch* upon this notice will be curious and able enough to ſupply my defects.

His majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome employment in his court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleaſed to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the emperor of *Japan*. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I ſold in *England* for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of *May*, 1709, I took a ſolemn leave of his majeſty and all my friends. This prince was ſo gracious, as to order a guard to conduct me to *Glanguenſtald*, which is a royal port to the *ſouth-weſt* part of the iſland. In ſix days I found a veſſel ready to carry me to *Japan*, and ſpent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a ſmall port-town called *Xamoſchi*, ſituated on the *ſouth-eaſt* part of *Japan*; the town lies on the *weſtern* point, where there is a narrow ſtreight leading *northward* into a long arm of the ſea, upon the *north-weſt* part of which *Yedo* the metropolis ſtands. At landing I ſhewed the cuſtom-houſe officers my letter from the king of *Luggnagg* to his imperial majeſty. They knew the ſeal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impreſſion was *A king lifting up a lame beggar from the earth*. The magiſtrates

trates of the town, hearing of my letter, received me as a public miniſter; they provided me with carriages and ſervants and bore my charges to *Yedo*, where I was admitted to an audience, and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the emperor by an interpreter, who then gave me notice by his majeſty's order, that I ſhould ſignify my requeſt, and whatever it were, it ſhould be granted for the ſake of his royal brother of *Luggnagg*. This interpreter was a perſon employed to tranſact affairs with the *hollanders*; he ſoon conjectured by my countenance, that I was an *european*, and therefore repeated his majeſty's commands in *low-dutch*, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I anſwered (as I had before determined) that I was a *dutch* merchant ſhipwrecked in a very remote country, from whence I had travelled by ſea and land to *Luggnagg*, and then took ſhipping for *Japan*, where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with ſome of theſe I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into *Europe:* I therefore moſt humbly entreated his royal favour to give order, that I ſhould be conducted in ſafety to *Nangaſac:* to this I added another petition, that for the ſake of my patron the king of *Luggnagg*, his majeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my performing the ceremony impoſed on my countrymen, of *trampling upon the crucifix*; becauſe I had been thrown into his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading. When this latter peti-

tion was interpreted to the emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurpriſed; and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my countrymen, who ever made any ſcruple in this point; and that he began to doubt, whether I was a real *hollander*, or no; but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a *chriſtian*. However, for the reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the king of *Luggnagg* by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the *ſingularity* of my humour; but the affair muſt be managed with dexterity, and his officers ſhould be commanded to let me paſs as it were by forgetfulneſs. For he aſſured me, that if the ſecret ſhould be diſcovered by my countrymen the *Dutch*, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned my thanks by the interpreter for ſo unuſual a favour; and ſome troops being at that time on their march to *Nangaſac*, the commanding officer had orders to convey me ſafe thither with particular inſtructions about the buſineſs of the *crucifix*.

On the 9th day of *June*, 1709, I arrived at *Nangaſac* after a very long and troubleſome journey. I ſoon fell into company of ſome *dutch* ſailors belonging to the *Amboyna* of *Amſterdam*, a ſtout ſhip of 450 tons. I had lived long in *Holland*, purſuing my ſtudies at *Leyden*, and I ſpoke *dutch* well. The ſeamen ſoon knew from whence I came laſt; they were curious to enquire into my voyages, and courſe of life. I made up a ſtory as ſhort and probable as I could, but concealed the greateſt part.

I knew

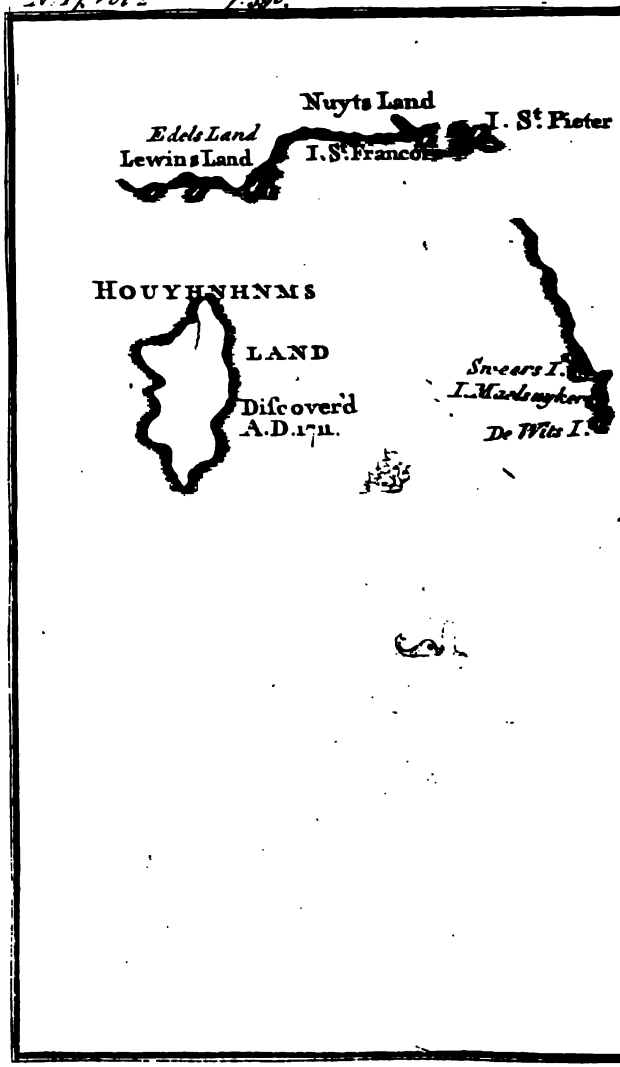
I knew many perſons in *Holland*; I was able to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obſcure people in the province of *Gelderland*. I would have given the captain (one *Theodorus Vangrult*) what he pleaſed to aſk for my voyage to *Holland*; but underſtanding I was a ſurgeon, he was contented to take half the uſual rate, on condition that I would ſerve him in the way of my calling. Before we took ſhipping, I was often aſked by ſome of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above-mentioned? I evaded the queſtion by general anſwers, that I had ſatisfied the emperor and court in all particulars. However, a malicious rogue of a ſkipper went to an officer, and pointing to me told him, I had not yet *trampled on the crucifix*: but the other who had received inſtructions to let me paſs, gave the raſcal twenty ſtrokes on the ſhoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with ſuch queſtions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We ſailed with a fair wind to the *cape of Good Hope*, where we ſtaid only to take in freſh water. On the 10th of *April*, 1710, we arrived ſafe at *Amſterdam*, having loſt only three men by ſickneſs in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the fore-maſt into the ſea not far from the coaſt of *Guinea*. From *Amſterdam* I ſoon after ſet ſail for *England* in a ſmall veſſel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of *April* we put in at the *Downs*. I landed next morning, and ſaw

once more my native country after an abſence of five years and ſix months compleat. I went ſtrait to *Redriff*, where I arrived the ſame day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

A VOYAGE


Nuyts Land
I. St. Pieter
Edels Land
Lewins Land
I. St. Francois
HOUYHNHNMS
LAND
Discover'd
A.D. 1711.
Sweers I.
I. Maelsuyker
De Wits I.

A

VOYAGE

To the Country of the

HOUYHNHNMS.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin. Set him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

I Continued at home with my wife and children about five months in a very happy condition, if I could have learned the leſſon of knowing when I was well. I left my poor wife big with child, and accepted an advantageous offer made me to be captain of the *Adventure*, a ſtout merchant-man of 350 tons: for I underſtood navigation well, and being grown weary of a ſurgeon's employment at ſea, which however I could exerciſe upon occaſion, I took a ſkilful young man of that calling, one *Robert Pureſoy*, into my ſhip. We ſet ſail from *Portſmouth* upon the 7th day of *September*, 1710; on the 14th, we met with cap-

tain *Pocock* of *Briſtol* at *Tenariff*, who was going to the bay of *Campechy* to cut logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a ſtorm; I heard ſince my return, that his ſhip foundered, and none eſcaped, but one cabbin-boy. He was an honeſt man, and a good ſailor, but a little too poſitive in his own opinions, which was the cauſe of his deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been ſafe at home with his family at this time, as well as myſelf.

I had ſeveral men died in my ſhip of calentures, ſo that I was forced to get recruits out of *Barbadoes* and the *Leeward Iſlands*, where I touched by the direction of the merchants, who employed me; which I had ſoon too much cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards, that moſt of them had been *bucaneers**. I had fifty hands on board, and my orders were, that I ſhould trade with the *Indians* in the *South-ſea*, and make what diſcoveries I could. Theſe rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conſpiracy to ſeize the ſhip, and ſecure me; which they did one morning, ruſhing into my cabbin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me over-board, if I offered to ſtir. I told them, I was their priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then they unbound me, only faſten-

* Certain pyrates, that infeſted the *Weſt-Indies*, were ſo called.

ing

ing one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a centry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to ſhoot me dead, if I attempted my liberty. They ſent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ſhip to themſelves. Their deſign was to turn pyrates, and plunder the *Spaniards*, which they could not do, till they got more men. But firſt they reſolved to ſell the goods in the ſhip, and then go to *Madagaſcar* for recruits, ſeveral among them having died ſince my confinement. They ſailed many weeks, and traded with the *Indians*; but I knew not what courſe they took, being kept a cloſe priſoner in my cabbin, and expecting nothing leſs than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the 9th day of *May*, 1711, one *James Welch* came down to my cabbin, and ſaid he had orders from the captain to ſet me a-ſhore. I expoſtulated with him, but in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me, who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my beſt ſuit of cloaths, which were as good as new, and take a ſmall bundle of linnen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were ſo civil as not to ſearch my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had with ſome other little neceſſaries. They rowed about a league; and then ſet me down on a ſtrand. I deſired them to tell me, what country it was. They all ſwore, they knew no more than myſelf, but ſaid, that the eaptain

tain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they had ſold the lading, to get rid of me in the firſt place, where they could diſcover land. They puſhed off immediately, adviſing me to make haſte for fear of being overtaken by the tide, and ſo bad me farewel.

In this deſolate condition I advanced forward, and ſoon got upon firm ground, where I ſat down on a bank to reſt myſelf and conſider what I had beſt do. When I was a little refreſhed, I went up into the country, reſolving to deliver myſelf to the firſt ſavages I ſhould meet, and purchaſe my life from them by ſome bracelets, glaſs rings, and other toys, which ſailors uſually provide themſelves with in thoſe voyages, and whereof I had ſome about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of graſs, and ſeveral fields of oats. I walked very circumſpectly for fear of being ſurpriſed, or ſuddenly ſhot with an arrow from behind, or on either ſide. I fell into a beaten road, where I ſaw many tracks of human feet, and ſome of cows, but moſt of horſes. At laſt I beheld ſeveral animals in a field, and one or two of the ſame kind ſitting in trees. Their ſhape was very ſingular and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of diſtinctly marking their form. Their heads and breaſts were covered

with a thick hair, ſome frizled, and others lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore-parts of their legs and feet; but the reſt of their bodies were bare, ſo that I might ſee their ſkins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks, except about the *anus*; which, I preſume, nature had placed there to defend them, as they ſat on the ground; for this poſture they uſed, as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind feet. They climbed high trees as nimbly as a ſquirrel, for they had ſtrong extended claws before and behind, terminating in ſharp points, and hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not ſo large as the males; they had long lank hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a ſort of down on the reſt of their bodies, except about the *anus* and *pudenda*. Their dugs hung between their fore-feet, and often reached almoſt to the ground as they walked. The hair of both ſexes was of ſeveral colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my travels ſo diſagreeable an animal, or one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an antipathy. So that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of contempt and averſion, I got up, and purſued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabbin of ſome *Indian*. I had not got far, when I met one of theſe creatures

creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral ways every feature of his viſage, and ſtared as at an object he had never ſeen before; then approaching nearer lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curioſity or miſchief, I could not tell: but I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat ſide of it, for I durſt not ſtrike with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked againſt me, if they ſhould come to know, that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beaſt felt the ſmart, he drew back, and roared ſo loud, that a herd of at leaſt forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling and making odious faces; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back againſt it kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this curſed brood getting hold of the branches behind leapt up into the tree, from whence they began to diſcharge their excrements on my head: however, I eſcaped pretty well by ſticking cloſe to the ſtem of the tree, but was almoſt ſtifled with the filth, which fell about me on every ſide.

In the midſt of this diſtreſs, I obſerved them all to run away on a ſudden as faſt as they could, at which I ventured to leave the tree, and purſue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this fright. But looking on my left hand I ſaw a horſe walking ſoftly in the field; which my perſecutors having

Müller inv. del. et Sc.

ing ſooner diſcovered, was the cauſe of their flight. The horſe ſtarted a little, when he came near me, but ſoon recovering himſelf looked full in my face with manifeſt tokens of wonder: he viewed my hands and feet, walking round me ſeveral times. I would have purſued my journey, but he placed himſelf directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aſpect, never offering the leaſt violence. We ſtood gazing at each other for ſome time; at laſt I took the boldneſs to reach my hand towards his neck with a deſign to ſtroak it, uſing the common ſtyle and whiſtle of jockies, when they are going to handle a ſtrange horſe. But this animal ſeemed to receive my civilities with diſdain, ſhook his head, and bent his brows, ſoftly raiſing up his right fore-foot to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in ſo different a cadence, that I almoſt began to think he was ſpeaking to himſelf in ſome language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another horſe came up; who applying himſelf to the firſt in a very formal manner, they gently ſtruck each other's right hoof before, neighing ſeveral times by turns, and varying the ſound, which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They went ſome paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking ſide by ſide, backward and forward, like perſons deliberating upon ſome affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not eſcape. I was amazed to

ſee

ſee ſuch actions and behaviour in brute beaſts; and concluded with myſelf, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reaſon, they muſt needs be the wiſeſt people upon earth. This thought gave me ſo much comfort, that I reſolved to go forward, until I could diſcover ſome houſe or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horſes to diſcourſe together as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who was a dapple grey, obſerving me to ſteal off, neighed after me in ſo expreſſive a tone, that I fancied myſelf to underſtand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him to expect his farther commands; but concealing my fear as much as I could; for I began to be in ſome pain, how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will eaſily believe, I did not much like my preſent ſituation.

The two horſes came up cloſe to me, looking with great earneſtneſs upon my face and hands. The grey ſteed rubbed my hat all round with his right fore-hoof, and diſcompoſed it ſo much, that I was forced to adjuſt it better by taking it off, and ſettling it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much ſurpriſed; the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and finding it to hang looſe about me, they both looked with new ſigns of wonder. He ſtroaked my right hand, ſeeming to admire the ſoftneſs and colour; but he ſqueeſed it ſo hard between his hoof and his paſtern, that I was forced to roar;

roar; after which they both touched me with all poſſible tenderneſs. They were under great perplexity about my ſhoes and ſtockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and uſing various geſtures, not unlike thoſe of a philoſopher, when he would attempt to ſolve ſome new and difficult phænomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of theſe animals was ſo orderly and rational, ſo acute and judicious, that I at laſt concluded, they muſt needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphoſed themſelves upon ſome deſign, and ſeeing a ſtranger in the way reſolved to divert themſelves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the ſight of a man ſo very different in habit, feature, and complexion, from thoſe who might probably live in ſo remote a climate. Upon the ſtrength of this reaſoning I ventured to addreſs them in the following manner: gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cauſe to believe, you can underſtand any language; therefore I make bold to let your worſhips know that I am a poor diſtreſſed *engliſhman* driven by his misfortunes upon your coaſt, and I entreat one of you to let me ride upon his back, as if he were a real horſe, to ſome houſe or village, where I can be relieved. In return of which favour I will make you a preſent of this knife and bracelet (taking them out of my pocket.) The two creatures ſtood ſilent while I ſpoke, ſeeming to liſten with great attention; and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other,

other, as if they were engaged in ſerious converſation. I plainly obſerved, that their language expreſſed the paſſions very well, and the words might with little pains be reſolved into an alphabet more eaſily than the *chineſe*.

I could frequently diſtinguiſh the word *yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them ſeveral times; and although it was impoſſible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two horſes were buſy in converſation, I endeavoured to practiſe this word upon my tongue; and as ſoon as they were ſilent, I boldly pronounced *yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating at the ſame time as near as I could the neighing of a horſe; at which they were both viſibly ſurpriſed, and the grey repeated the ſame word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent, wherein I ſpoke after him as well as I could, and found myſelf perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a ſecond word much harder to be pronounced; but reducing it to the *engliſh* orthography, may be ſpelt thus, *Houyhnhnm*. I did not ſucceed in this ſo well as the former; but after two or three farther trials I had better fortune; and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After ſome farther diſcourſe, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two friends took their leaves with the ſame compliment of ſtriking each other's hoof; and the grey made me

me ſigns that I ſhould walk before him; wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to ſlacken my pace, he would cry *hhuun, hhuun*; I gueſſed his meaning, and gave him to underſtand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faſter; upon which he would ſtand a-while to let me reſt.

CHAP. II.

The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in this country.*

HAving travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building made of timber ſtuck in the ground, and wattled acroſs; the roof was low, and covered with ſtraw. I now began to be a little comforted; and took out ſome toys, which travellers uſually carry for preſents to the ſavage *indians* of *america* and other parts, in hopes the people of the houſe would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horſe made me a ſign to go in firſt; it was a large room with a ſmooth clay floor, and a rack and manger, extending the whole length on one ſide. There were three nags, and two mares not eating, but ſome of them ſitting down upon their

hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to ſee the reſt employed in domeſtic buſineſs, theſe ſeemed but ordinary cattle; however this confirmed my firſt opinion, that a people, who could ſo far civilize brute animals, muſt needs excel in wiſdom all the nations of the world. The grey came in juſt after, and thereby prevented any ill treatment, which the others might have given me. He neighed to them ſeveral times in a ſtyle of authority, and received anſwers.

Beyond this room there were three others reaching the length of the houſe, to which you paſſed through three doors, oppoſite to each other, in the manner of a viſta; we went through the ſecond room towards the third; here the grey walked in firſt, beckoning me to attend: I waited in the ſecond room, and got ready my preſents for the maſter and miſtreſs of the houſe: they were two knives, three bracelets of falſe pearl, a ſmall looking-glaſs, and a bead necklace. The horſe neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear ſome anſwers in a human voice, but I heard no other returns, than in the ſame dialect, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began to think, that this houſe muſt belong to ſome perſon of great note among them, becauſe there appeared ſo much ceremony, before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality ſhould be ſerved all by horſes, was beyond my comprehenſion. I feared my brain was diſturbed by my ſufferings and misfortunes: I

rouſed

rouſed myſelf, and looked about me in the room where I was left alone; this was furniſhed like the firſt, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the ſame objects ſtill occurred. I pinched my arms and ſides to awake myſelf, hoping I might be in a dream. I then abſolutely concluded, that all theſe appearances could be nothing elſe but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to purſue theſe reflections; for the grey horſe came to the door, and made me a ſign to follow him into the third room; where I ſaw a very comely mare, together with a colt and fole, ſitting on their haunches upon matts of ſtraw not unartfully made and perfectly neat and clean.

The mare ſoon after my entrance roſe from her matt, and coming up cloſe, after having nicely obſerved my hands and face, gave me a moſt contemptuous look; and turning to the horſe, I heard the word *yahoo* often repeated betwixt them; the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend, although it were the firſt I had learned to pronounce; but I was ſoon better informed to my everlaſting mortification: for the horſe beckoning to me with his head, and repeating the word *hhuun, hhuun*, as he did upon the road, which I underſtood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building at ſome diſtance from the houſe. Here we entered, and I ſaw three of thoſe deteſtable creatures, which I firſt met after my landing, feeding

upon roots and the fleſh of ſome animals, which I afterwards found to be that of aſſes and dogs, and now and then a cow dead by accident or diſeaſe. They were all tied by the neck with ſtrong wyths faſtened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore-feet, and tore it with their teeth.

The maſter horſe ordered a ſorrel nag, one of his ſervants, to untie the largeſt of theſe animals, and take him into the yard. The beaſt and I were brought cloſe together; and our countenances diligently compared both by maſter and ſervant, who thereupon repeated ſeveral times the word *yahoo*. My horror and aſtoniſhment are not to be deſcribed, when I obſerved in this abominable animal a perfect human figure: the face of it indeed was flat and broad, the noſe depreſſed, the lips large, and the mouth wide: but theſe differences are common to all ſavage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are diſtorted by the natives ſuffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs nuzzling with their face againſt the mother's ſhoulders. The fore-feet of the *yahoo* differed from my hands in nothing elſe, but the length of the nails, the coarſeneſs and brownneſs of the palms, and the hairineſs on the backs. There was the ſame reſemblance between our feet, with the ſame differences, which I knew very well, though the horſes did not becauſe of my ſhoes and ſtockings; the ſame in every part of our bodies,

dies, except as to hairineſs and colour, which I have already deſcribed.

The great difficulty, that ſeemed to ſtick with the two horſes, was, to ſee the reſt of my body ſo very different from that of a *yahoo*, for which I was obliged to my cloaths, whereof they had no conception. The ſorrel nag offered me a root, which he held (after their manner, as we ſhall deſcribe in its proper place) between his hoof and paſtern; I took it in my hand, and having ſmelt it returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *yahoo*'s kennel a piece of aſs's fleſh, but it ſmelt ſo offenſively, that I turned from it with loathing; he then threw it to the *yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured [a]. He afterwards ſhewed me a whiſp of hay and a fetlock full of oats; but I ſhook my head to ſignify, that neither of theſe were food for me. And indeed I now apprehended, that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve, if I did not get to ſome of my own ſpecies; for as to thoſe filthy *yahoos*, although there were few greater lovers of mankind at that time, than myſelf; yet I confeſs, I never ſaw any ſenſitive being ſo deteſtable on all accounts; and the more I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I ſtayed in

[a] Whoever is diſguſted with this picture of a *yahoo*, would do well to reflect, that it becomes his own in exact proportion as he deviates from virtue, for virtue is the perfection of reaſon: the appetites of thoſe abandoned to vice are not leſs brutal and ſordid than that of a *yahoo* for aſſes fleſh, nor is their life a ſtate of leſs abject ſervility.

that country. This the maſter horſe obſerved by my behaviour, and therefore ſent the *yahoo* back to his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his mouth, at which I was much ſurpriſed, although he did it with eaſe, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural; and made other ſigns to know what I would eat; but I could not return him ſuch an anſwer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood me, I did not ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any way for finding myſelf nouriſhment. While we were thus engaged, I obſerved a cow paſſing by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expreſſed a deſire to go and milk her. This had its effect; for he led me back into the houſe, and ordered a mare-ſervant to open a room, where a good ſtore of milk lay in earthen and wooden veſſels after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large bowl full, of which I drank very heartily, and found myſelf well refreſhed.

About noon I ſaw coming towards the houſe a kind of vehicle drawn like a ſledge by four *yahoos*. There was in it an old ſteed, who ſeemed to be of quality; he alighted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with our horſe, who received him with great civility. They dined in the beſt room, and had oats boiled in milk for the ſecond courſe, which the old horſe eat warm, but the reſt cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided into ſe-

veral partitions, round which they ſat on their haunches upon boſſes of ſtraw. In the middle was a large rack, with angles anſwering to every partition of the manger. So that each horſe and mare eat their own hay, and their own maſh of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and fole appeared very modeſt; and that of the maſter and miſtreſs extremely chearful and complaiſant to their gueſt. The grey ordered me to ſtand by him; and much diſcourſe paſſed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the ſtranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word *yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the maſter-grey obſerving, ſeemed perplexed, diſcovering ſigns of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet; he put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would ſignify, that I ſhould reduce them to their former ſhape, which I preſently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occaſioned farther talk, and I ſaw the company was pleaſed with my behaviour, whereof I ſoon found the good effects. I was ordered to ſpeak the few words I underſtood; and while they were at dinner, the maſter taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water, and ſome others; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the maſter horſe took me aſide, and by ſigns and words made me underſtand the concern he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refuſed them at firſt, yet upon ſecond thoughts I conſidered, that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be ſufficient with milk to keep me alive, till I could make my eſcape to ſome other country, and to creatures of my own ſpecies. The horſe immediately ordered a white mare-ſervant of his family to bring me a good quantity of oats in a ſort of wooden tray. Theſe I heated before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed them till the huſks came off, which I made a ſhift to winnow from the grain; I ground and beat them between two ſtones, then took water, and made them into a paſte or cake, which I toaſted at the fire, and eat warm with milk. It was at firſt a very inſipid diet, though common enough in many parts of *Europe*, but grew tolerable by time; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the firſt experiment I had made, how eaſily nature is ſatisfied. And I cannot but obſerve, that I never had one hour's ſickneſs, while I ſtaid in this iſland. It is true, I ſometimes made a ſhift to catch a rabbit, or bird, by ſpringes made of *yahoo*'s hairs; and I often gathered wholeſome herbs, which I boiled, or eat as ſalads with my bread; and now and then for a rarity I made a

little

little butter, and drank the whey. I was at firſt at a great loſs for ſalt; but cuſtom ſoon reconciled me to the want of it; and I am confident, that the frequent uſe of ſalt among us is an effect of luxury, and was firſt introduced only as a provocative to drink, except where it is neceſſary for preſerving of fleſh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets. For we obſerve no animal to be fond of it but man: and as to myſelf, when I left this country, it was a great while before I could endure the taſte of it in any thing that I eat.

This is enough to ſay upon the ſubject of my diet, wherewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readers were perſonally concerned, whether we fare well or ill. However it was neceſſary to mention this matter, leſt the world ſhould think it impoſſible, that I could find ſuſtenance for three years in ſuch a country and among ſuch inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the maſter horſe ordered a place for me to lodge in; it was but ſix yards from the houſe, and ſeparated from the ſtable of the *yahoos*. Here I got ſome ſtraw, and covering myſelf with my own cloaths ſlept very ſound. But I was in a ſhort time better accommodated, as the reader ſhall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author ſtudious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality come out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage.*

MY principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my maſter (for ſo I ſhall henceforth call him) and his children, and every ſervant of his houſe were deſirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal ſhould diſcover ſuch marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and enquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my *journal-book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent by deſiring thoſe of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a ſorrel nag, one of the under ſervants, was very ready to aſſiſt me.

In ſpeaking they pronounce through the noſe and throat, and their language approaches neareſt to the *high-dutch*, or *german*, of any I know in *Europe*; but is much more graceful and ſignificant. The emperor *Charles* V. made almoſt the ſame obſervation, when he ſaid, That if he were to ſpeak to his horſe, it ſhould be in *high-dutch*.

The curioſity and impatience of my maſter were ſo great, that he ſpent many hours of his leiſure

leiſure to inſtruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I muſt be a *yahoo*; but my teachableneſs, civility, and cleanlineſs, aſtoniſhed him; which were qualities altogether oppoſite to thoſe animals. He was moſt perplexed about my cloaths, reaſoning ſometimes with himſelf, whether they were a part of my body; for I never pulled them off till the family were aſleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My maſter was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired thoſe appearances of reaſon, which I diſcovered in all my actions; and to know my ſtory from my own mouth, which he hoped he ſhould ſoon do by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and ſentences. To help my memory I formed all I learned into the *engliſh* alphabet, and writ the words down with the tranſlations. This laſt after ſome time I ventured to do in my maſter's preſence. It coſt me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing; for the inhabitants have not the leaſt idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time I was able to underſtand moſt of his queſtions; and in three months could give him ſome tolerable anſwers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; becauſe the *yahoos* (whom he ſaw I exactly reſembled in my head, hands, and face, that were only viſible) with ſome appearance of cunning, and the

the ſtrongeſt diſpoſition to miſchief, were obſerved to be the moſt unteachable of all brutes. I anſwered, that I came over the ſea from a far place with many others of my own kind in a great hollow veſſel made of the bodies of trees; that my companions forced me to land on this coaſt, and then left me to ſhift for myſelf. It was with ſome difficulty, and by the help of many ſigns, that I brought him to underſtand me. He replied, that I muſt needs be miſtaken, or that I *ſaid the thing which was not* (for they have no word in their language to expreſs lying or falſhood.) He knew it was impoſſible, that there could be a country beyond the ſea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden veſſel whither they pleaſed upon water. He was ſure no *Houyhnhnm* alive could make ſuch a veſſel, nor would truſt *yahoos* to manage it.

The word *Houyhnhnm* in their tongue ſignifies a *horſe*, and in its etymology, *the perfection of nature*. I told my maſter that I was at a loſs for expreſſion, but would improve as faſt as I could; and hoped in a ſhort time I ſhould be able to tell him wonders: he was pleaſed to direct his own mare, his colt and fole, and the ſervants of the family, to take all opportunities of inſtructing me; and every day for two or three hours he was at the ſame pains himſelf: ſeveral horſes and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our houſe, upon the report ſpread of a wonderful *yahoo* that could ſpeak like a *Houyhnhnm*, and

ſeemed

ſeemed in his words and actions to diſcover ſome glimmerings of reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many queſtions, and received ſuch anſwers as I was able to return. By all theſe advantages I made ſo great a progreſs, that in five months from my arrival I underſtood whatever was ſpoken, and could expreſs myſelf tolerably well.

The *Houyhnhnms* who came to viſit my maſter out of a deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *yahoo*, becauſe my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve me without the uſual hair or ſkin, except on my head, face, and hands; but I diſcovered that ſecret to my maſter upon an accident, which happened about a fortnight before.

I have already told the reader, that every night, when the family were gone to bed, it was my cuſtom to ſtrip, and cover myſelf with my cloaths: it happened one morning early, that my maſter ſent for me by the ſorrel nag, who was his valet; when he came, I was faſt aſleep, my cloaths fallen off on one ſide, and my ſhirt above my waiſt. I awaked at the noiſe he made, and obſerved him to deliver his meſſage in ſome diſorder; after which he went to my maſter, and in a great fright gave him a very confuſed account of what he had ſeen: this I preſently diſcovered; for going as ſoon as I was dreſſed to pay my attendance upon his honour, he aſked me the meaning of what his

his ſervant had reported; that I was not the ſame thing when I ſlept, as I appeared to be at other times; that his valet aſſured him, ſome part of me was white, ſome yellow, at leaſt not ſo white, and ſome brown.

I had hitherto concealed the ſecret of my dreſs in order to diſtinguiſh myſelf, as much as poſſible, from that curſed race of *yahoos*; but now I found it in vain to do ſo any longer. Beſides I conſidered, that my cloaths and ſhoes would ſoon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and muſt be ſupplied by ſome contrivance from the hides of *yahoos*, or other brutes; whereby the whole ſecret would be known: I therefore told my maſter, that in the country from whence I came thoſe of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency, as to avoid the inclemencies of air both hot and cold; of which, as to my own perſon, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleaſed to command me; only deſiring his excuſe, if I did not expoſe thoſe parts that nature taught us to conceal. He ſaid my diſcourſe was all very ſtrange, but eſpecially the laſt part; for he could not underſtand, why nature ſhould teach us to conceal what nature had given: that neither himſelf nor family were aſhamed of any parts of their bodies; but however I might do as I pleaſed. Whereupon I firſt unbuttoned my coat, and pulled it off. I did the ſame with my waiſtcoat; I drew off my ſhoes, ſtockings, and breeches.

breeches. I let my ſhirt down to my waiſt, and drew up the bottom, faſtening it like a girdle about my middle to hide my nakedneſs.

My maſter obſerved the whole performance with great ſigns of curioſity and admiration. He took up all my cloaths in his paſtern one piece after another, and examined them diligently; he then ſtroaked my body very gently, and looked round me ſeveral times, after which he ſaid, it was plain I muſt be a perfect *yahoo*; but that I differed very much from the reſt of my ſpecies in the ſoftneſs, whiteneſs, and ſmoothneſs of my ſkin, my want of hair in ſeveral parts of my body, the ſhape and ſhortneſs of my claws behind and before, and my affectation of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He deſired to ſee no more; and gave me leave to put on my cloaths again, for I was ſhuddering with cold.

I expreſſed my uneaſineſs at his giving me ſo often the appellation of *yahoo*, an odious animal, for which I had ſo utter an hatred and contempt: I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and take the ſame order in his family, and among his friends, whom he ſuffered to ſee me. I requeſted likewiſe, that the ſecret of my having a falſe covering to my body might be known to none but himſelf, at leaſt as long as my preſent cloathing ſhould laſt; for as to what the ſorrel nag his valet had obſerved, his honour might command him to conceal it.

All

All this my maſter very graciouſly conſented to, and thus the ſecret was kept till my cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to ſupply by ſeveral contrivances, that ſhall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean time he deſired I would go on with my utmoſt diligence to learn their language, becauſe he was more aſtoniſhed at my capacity for ſpeech and reaſon, than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with ſome impatience to hear the wonders, which I promiſed to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the pains he had been at to inſtruct me; he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility, becauſe, as he told them privately, this would put me into good humour, and make me more diverting.

Every day, when I waited on him, beſide the trouble he was at in teaching, he would aſk me ſeveral queſtions concerning myſelf, which I anſwered as well as I could; and by theſe means he had already received ſome general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the ſeveral ſteps, by which I advanced to a more regular converſation: but the firſt account I gave of myſelf in any order and length was to this purpoſe:

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own ſpecies; that we travelled upon the ſeas in a great hollow veſſel made of wood, and larger than his honour's houſe.

houſe. I deſcribed the ſhip to him in the beſt terms I could, and explained by the help of my handkerchief diſplayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us I was ſet on ſhore on this coaſt, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the perſecution of thoſe execrable *yahoos*. He aſked me, who made the ſhip, and how it was poſſible that the *Houyhnhnms* of my country would leave it to the management of brutes? My anſwer was, that I durſt proceed no farther in my relation, unleſs he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had ſo often promiſed. He agreed; and I went on by aſſuring him, that the ſhip was made by creatures like myſelf, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals; and that upon my arrival hither I was as much aſtoniſhed to ſee the *Houyhnhnms* act like rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding ſome marks of reaſon in a creature he was pleaſed to call a *yahoo*; to which I owned my reſemblance in every part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I ſaid farther, that if good fortune ever reſtored me to my native country to relate my travels hither, as I reſolved to do, every body would believe, that I *ſaid the thing that was not*; that I invented the ſtory out of my own head; and (with all poſſible reſpect to himſelf,

his family, and friends, and under his promiſe of not being offended) our countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a *Houyhnhnm* ſhould be the preſiding creature of a nation, and a *yahoo* the brute.

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *notion of truth and falſhood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage.*

MY maſter heard me with great appearances of uneaſineſs in his countenance; becauſe *doubting*, or *not believing*, are ſo little known in this country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves under ſuch circumſtances. And I remember, in frequent diſcourſes with my maſter concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occaſion to talk of *lying* and *falſe repreſentation*, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant; although he had otherwiſe a moſt acute judgment. For he argued thus: that the uſe of ſpeech was to make us underſtand one another, and to receive information of facts; now, if any one *ſaid the thing which was not*, theſe ends were defeated; becauſe I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand him; and I am ſo far from receiving information, that he leaves me worſe

worſe than in ignorance; for I am led to believe a thing *black* when it is *white*, and *ſhort* when it is *long*. And theſe were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of *lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood, and ſo univerſally practiſed, among human creatures.

To return from this digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the *yahoos* were the only governing animals in my country, which my maſter ſaid, was altogether paſt his conception, he deſired to know, whether we had *Houyhnhnms* among us, and what was their employment: I told him, we had great numbers; that in ſummer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houſes with hay and oats, where *yahoo*-ſervants were employed to rub their ſkins ſmooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, ſerve them with food, and make their beds. I underſtand you well, ſaid my maſter; it is now very plain from all you have ſpoken, that, whatever ſhare of reaſon the *yahoos* pretend to, the *Houyhnhnms* are your maſters; I heartily wiſh our *yahoos* would be ſo tractable. I begged his honour would pleaſe to excuſe me from proceeding any farther, becauſe I was very certain that the account he expected from me would be highly diſpleaſing. But he inſiſted in commanding me to let him know the beſt and the worſt: I told him he ſhould be obeyed. I owned, that the *Houyhnhnms* among us, whom we called *horſes*, were the moſt generous and comely animal we had; that they excelled in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs; and when

they belonged to perſons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots, they were treated with much kindneſs and care, till they fell into diſeaſes, or became foundered in the feet; but then they were ſold, and uſed to all kind of drudgery, till they died; after which their ſkins were ſtripped, and ſold for what they were worth, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horſes had not ſo good fortune, being kept by farmers and carriers and other mean people who put them to greater labour, and fed them worſe. I deſcribed, as well as I could, our way of riding; the ſhape and uſe of a bridle, a ſaddle, a ſpur, and a whip; of harneſs and wheels. I added, that we faſtened plates of a certain hard ſubſtance, called *iron*, at the bottom of their feet to preſerve their hoofs from being broken by the ſtony ways, on which we often travelled.

My maſter, after ſome expreſſions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a *Houyhnhnm*'s back; for he was ſure, that the weakeſt ſervant in his houſe would be able to ſhake off the ſtrongeſt *yahoo*; or by lying down, and rolling on his back, ſqueeſe the brute to death. I anſwered, that our horſes were trained up from three or four years old to the ſeveral uſes we intended them for; that, if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were ſeverely beaten, while they were

were young, for any miſchievous tricks: that the males, deſigned for the common uſe of riding or draught, were generally *caſtrated* about two years after their birth to take down their ſpirits and make them more tame and gentle; that they were indeed ſenſible of rewards and puniſhments; but his honour would pleaſe to conſider, that they had not the leaſt tincture of reaſon, any more than the *yahoos* in this country.

It put me to the pains of many circumlocutions to give my maſter a right idea of what I ſpoke; for their language doth not abound in variety of words, becauſe their wants and paſſions are fewer than among us. But it is impoſſible to expreſs his noble reſentment at our ſavage treatment of the *Houyhnhnm* race; particularly after I had explained the manner and uſe of *caſtrating* horſes among us to hinder them from propagating their kind, and to render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible there could be any country, where *yahoos* alone were endued with reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing animal; becauſe reaſon will in time always prevail againſt brutal ſtrength. But, conſidering the frame of our bodies, and eſpecially of mine, he thought no creature of equal bulk was ſo ill contrived for employing that reaſon in the common offices of life; whereupon, he deſired to know, whether thoſe, among whom I lived, reſembled me or the *yahoos* of his country. I aſſured him, that I was as well ſhaped as moſt of my

age: but the younger, and the females, were much more ſoft and tender, and the ſkins of the latter generally as white as milk. He ſaid, I differed indeed from other *yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether ſo deformed; but in point of real advantage he thought I differed for the worſe. That my nails were of no uſe either to my fore or hinder-feet; as to my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; that they were too ſoft to bear the ground; that I generally went with them uncovered, neither was the covering I ſometimes wore on them of the ſame ſhape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any ſecurity, for if either of my hinder-feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body: the flatneſs of my face, the prominence of my noſe, mine eyes placed directly in front, ſo that I could not look on either ſide without turning my head: that I was not able to feed myſelf without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth: and therefore nature had placed thoſe joints to anſwer that neceſſity. He knew not, what could be the uſe of thoſe ſeveral clefts and diviſions in my feet behind; that theſe were too ſoft to bear the hardneſs and ſharpneſs of ſtones without a covering made from the ſkin of ſome other brute; that my whole body wanted a fence againſt heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every

day

day with tediouſneſs and trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every animal in this country naturally to abhor the *yahoos*, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtronger drove from them. So that, ſuppoſing us to have the gift of reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural antipathy, which every creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own ſtory, the country where I was born, and the ſeveral actions and events of my life before I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I was, that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every point; but I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain myſelf on ſeveral ſubjects, whereof his honour could have no conception; becauſe I ſaw nothing in his country, to which I could reſemble them. That however I would do my beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by ſimilitudes, humbly deſiring his aſſiſtance, when I wanted proper words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my birth was of honeſt parents in an iſland called *England*, which was remote from this country as many days journey, as the ſtrongeſt of his honour's ſervants could travel in the annual courſe of the ſun. That I was bred a ſurgeon, whoſe trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body gotten by accident or violence; that my country was go-

verned by a female man, whom we called *queen*. That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myſelf and family when I ſhould return. That in my laſt voyage I was commander of the ſhip, and had about fifty *yahoos* under me, many of which died at ſea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral nations. That our ſhip was twice in danger of being ſunk; the firſt time by a great ſtorm, and the ſecond by ſtriking againſt a rock. Here my maſter interpoſed, by aſking me, how I could perſuade ſtrangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were fellows of deſperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by law-ſuits; others ſpent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treaſon; many for murder, theft, poyſoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coining falſe money, for committing rapes or ſodomy; for flying from their colours, or deſerting to the enemy, and moſt of them had broken priſon; none of theſe durſt return to their native countries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a jail; and therefore they were under a neceſſity of ſeeking a livelihood in other places.

During this diſcourſe, my maſter was pleaſed to interrupt me ſeveral times; I had made uſe of many circumlocutions in deſcribing to him

him the nature of the ſeveral crimes, for which moſt of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up ſeveral days converſation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loſs to know, what could be the uſe or neceſſity of practiſing thoſe vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome ideas of the deſire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of luſt, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe by putting caſes and making ſuppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, puniſhment, and a thouſand other things had no terms, wherein that language could expreſs them; which made the difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my maſter any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent underſtanding, much improved by contemplation and converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform, and deſired I would give him ſome particular account of that land, which we call *Europe*, but eſpecially of my own country.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The author, at his maſter's commands, informs him of the ſtate of England. *The cauſes of war among the princes of* Europe. *The author begins to explain the* Engliſh *conſtitution.*

THE reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that the following extract of many converſations I had with my maſter, contains a ſummary of the moſt material points, which were diſcourſed at ſeveral times for above two years; his honour often deſiring fuller ſatisfaction, as I farther improved in the *Houyhnhnm* tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole ſtate of *Europe*; I diſcourſed of trade and manufactures, of arts and ſciences; and the anſwers I gave to all the queſtions he made as they aroſe upon ſeveral ſubjects, were a fund of converſation not to be exhauſted. But I ſhall here only ſet down the ſubſtance of what paſſed between us concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumſtances, while I ſtrictly adhere to truth. My only concern is, that I ſhall hardly be able to do juſtice to my maſter's arguments and expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a tranſlation into our barbarous *Engliſh*.

In

In obedience therefore to his honour's commands, I related to him the *revolution* under the prince of *Orange*; the long war with *France* entered into by the ſaid prince and renewed by his ſucceſſor the preſent queen, wherein the greateſt powers of *Chriſtendom* were engaged, and which ſtill continued: I computed, at his requeſt, that about a million of *yahoos* might have been killed in the whole progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ſhips burnt or ſunk.

He aſked me, what were the uſual cauſes or motives that made one country go to war with another. I anſwered they were innumerable; but I ſhould only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern. Sometimes the corruption of miniſters, who engage their maſter in a war in order to ſtifle or divert the clamour of the ſubjects againſt their evil adminiſtration. Difference in opinions hath coſt many millions of lives: for inſtance, whether *fleſh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *fleſh*; whether the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine* [a]; whether *whiſtling* be a vice or a virtue [b]; whether it be better to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the fire [c]; what is the beſt colour for a *coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or *grey*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*,

[a] Tranſubſtantiation. [b] Church-muſic. [c] Kiſſing a croſs.

with many more *. Neither are any wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long continuance, as thoſe occaſioned by difference in opinion, eſpecially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide, which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon becauſe the enemy is too *ſtrong*; and ſometimes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neighbours *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things which we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable cauſe of a war, to invade a country after the people have been waſted by famine, deſtroyed by peſtilence, or embroiled by factions among themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into war againſt our neareſt ally, when one of his towns lie convenient for us, or a territory of land, that would render our dominions round and compact. If a prince ſends forces into a nation, where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make ſlaves of the reſt, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one prince deſires the aſſiſtance of another to ſecure him againſt an

* The colour and make of ſacred veſtments, and different orders of popiſh eccleſiaſtics.

invaſion,

invaſion, that the aſſiſtant, when he hath driven out the invader, ſhould ſeize on the dominions himſelf, and kill, impriſon, or baniſh the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood, or marriage, is a frequent cauſe of war between princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their diſpoſition to quarrel: *poor* nations are *hungry*, and *rich* nations are *proud*; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For theſe reaſons, the trade of a *ſoldier* is held the moſt honourable of all others: becauſe a *ſoldier* is a *yahoo* hired to kill in cold blood as many of his own ſpecies, who have never offended him, as poſſibly he can.

There is likewiſe a kind of beggarly princes in *Europe*, not able to make war by themſelves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for ſo much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themſelves, and it is the beſt part of their maintenance; ſuch are thoſe in many *northern* parts of *Europe*.

What you have told me (ſaid my maſter) upon the ſubject of war, does indeed diſcover moſt admirably the effects of that reaſon you pretend to: however it is happy that the *ſhame* is greater than the *danger*; and that nature hath left you utterly incapable of doing much miſchief. For, your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpoſe, unleſs by conſent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are ſo ſhort and tender, that one of our

our *yahoos* would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore in recounting the numbers of thoſe who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think you have *ſaid the thing which is not.*

I could not forbear ſhaking my head, and ſmiling a little at his ignorance. And being no ſtranger to the art of war, I gave him a deſcription of cannons, culverins, muſquets, carabines, piſtols, bullets, powder, ſwords, bayonets, battles, ſieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, ſea-fights, ſhips ſunk with a thouſand men, twenty-thouſand killed on each ſide, dying groans, limbs flying in the air, ſmoke, noiſe, confuſion, trampling to death under horſes feet; flight, purſuit, victory; fields ſtrewed with carcaſes, left for food to dogs and wolves, and birds of prey; plundering, ſtripping, raviſhing, burning and deſtroying. And to ſet forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I aſſured him, that I had ſeen them blow up a hundred enemies at once in a ſiege, and as many in a ſhip; and beheld the dead bodies drop down in pieces from the clouds, to the great diverſion of the ſpectators *.

I was

* It would perhaps be impoſſible, by the moſt laboured argument or forcible eloquence, to ſhew the abſurd injuſtice and horrid cruelty of war ſo effectually, as by this ſimple exhibition of them in a new light: with war, including every ſpecies of iniquity and every art of deſtruction, we become familiar by degrees under ſpecious terms, which are ſeldom examined, becauſe they are learned at an age, in which the mind implicitly receives and retains whatever is impreſt: thus it happens, that when

I was going on to more particulars, when my maſter commanded me ſilence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the nature of *yahoos*, might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their ſtrength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my diſcourſe had increaſed his abhorrence of the whole ſpecies, ſo he found it gave him a diſturbance in his mind, to which he was wholly a ſtranger before. He thought his ears, being uſed to ſuch abominable words, might by degrees admit them with leſs deteſtation. That although he hated the *yahoos* of this country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious qualities, than he did a *gnnayh* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a ſharp ſtone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature, pretending to reaſon, could be capable of ſuch enormities, he dreaded, leſt the corruption of that faculty might be worſe than brutality itſelf. He ſeemed therefore confident, that inſtead of reaſon we were only poſ-

when one man murders another to gratify his luſt, we ſhudder; but when one man murders a million to gratify his vanity, we approve and we admire, we envy and we applaud. If, when this and the preceding pages are read, we diſcover with aſtoniſhment, that when the ſame events have occurred in hiſtory we felt no emotion, and acquieſced in wars which we could not but know to have been commenced for ſuch cauſes, and carried on by ſuch means; let not him be cenſured for too much debaſing his ſpecies, who has contributed to their felicity and preſervation by ſtripping off the veil of cuſtom and prejudice, and holding up in their native deformity the vices by which they become wretched, and the arts by which they are deſtroyed.

ſeſſed

ſeſſed of ſome quality fitted to encreaſe our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled ſtream returns the image of an ill-ſhapen body not only *larger* but more *diſtorted*.

He added, that he had heard too much upon the ſubject of war both in this, and ſome former diſcourſes. There was another point, which a little perplexed him at preſent. I had informed him, that ſome of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by *law*; that I had already explained the meaning of the word; but he was at a loſs, how it ſhould come to paſs, that the *law*, which was intended for every man's preſervation, ſhould be any man's ruin. Therefore he deſired to be farther ſatisfied what I meant by *law*, and the *diſpenſers* thereof, according to the preſent practice in my own country: becauſe he thought *nature* and *reaſon* were ſufficient guides for a reaſonable animal, as we pretended to be, in ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I aſſured his honour, that *law* was a ſcience, in which I had not much converſed, further than by employing advocates in vain upon ſome injuſtices, that had been done me; however I would give him all the ſatisfaction I was able.

I ſaid, there was a ſociety of men among us bred up from their youth in the art of proving by words multiplied for the purpoſe, that *white* is *black*, and *black* is *white* according

ing

ing as they are paid *. To this ſociety all the reſt of the people are *ſlaves*. For example, if my neighbour hath a mind to my *cow*, he hires a *lawyer* to prove that he ought to have my *cow* from me. I muſt then hire another to defend my right, it being againſt all rules of *law*, that any man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now in this caſe I, who am the right owner, lie under two great diſadvantages; *firſt*, my *lawyer*, being practiſed almoſt from his cradle in defending falſhood, is quite out of his element, when he would be an advocate for juſtice, which is an unnatural office he always attempts with great awkwardneſs, if not with ill will. The *ſecond* diſadvantage is, that my *lawyer* muſt proceed with great caution, or elſe he will be reprimanded by the *judges*, and abhorred by his brethren as one that would leſſen the practice of the *law*. And therefore I have but two methods to preſerve my *cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my adverſary's *lawyer* with a double fee; who will then betray his client by inſinuating, that he hath *juſtice* on his ſide. The ſecond way is, for my *lawyer* to make my cauſe appear as *unjuſt* as he can by allowing the *cow* to belong to my adverſary; and this, if it be ſkilfully done, will certainly beſpeak the favour of the bench. Now your honour is to know, that theſe *judges* are perſons appointed to decide all controverſies of property, as well

* As in every cauſe counſel are fee'd on both ſides, it cannot be pretended, that this account is much exaggerated.

as for the tryal of criminals, and picked out from the moſt dextrous lawyers who are grown old or lazy; and having been byaſſed all their lives againſt truth and equity, lie under ſuch a fatal neceſſity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppreſſion, that I have known ſome of them refuſe a large bribe from the ſide where juſtice lay, rather than injure the faculty by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

It is a maxim among theſe lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again: and therefore they take ſpecial care to record all the deciſions formerly made againſt common juſtice, and the general reaſon of mankind. Theſe, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities to juſtify the moſt iniquitous opinions, and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

In pleading they ſtudiouſly avoid entering into the *merits* of the cauſe; but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon all *circumſtances* which are not to the purpoſe. For inſtance, in the caſe already mentioned: they never deſire to know what claim or title my adverſary hath to my *cow*; but whether the ſaid *cow* were red or black; her horns long or ſhort; whether the field I graze her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe was milked at home or abroad; what diſeaſes ſhe is ſubject to, and the like; after which they conſult *precedents*, adjourn the cauſe from time to time, and

and in ten, twenty, or thirty years come to an iſſue.

It is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this ſociety hath a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can underſtand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take ſpecial care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very eſſence of truth and falſhood, of right and wrong; ſo that it will take thirty years to decide, whether the field left me by my anceſtors for ſix generations belongs to me or to a ſtranger three hundred miles off.

In the trial of perſons accuſed for crimes againſt the ſtate, the method is much more ſhort and commendable: the judge firſt ſends to ſound the diſpoſition of thoſe in power, after which he can eaſily hang or ſave a criminal, ſtrictly preſerving all due forms of *law*.

Here my maſter interpoſing, ſaid it was a pity, that creatures endowed with ſuch prodigious abilities of mind, as theſe *lawyers*, by the deſcription I gave of them, muſt certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be inſtructors of others in wiſdom and knowledge. In anſwer to which I aſſured his honour, that in all points out of their own trade they were uſually the moſt ignorant and ſtupid generation among us, the moſt deſpicable in common converſation, avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally diſpoſed to pervert the general reaſon of mankind in every other

tants are able to conſume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or preſſed out of the fruit of certain trees, which made excellent drink; and the ſame proportion in every other convenience of life. But in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of the females, we ſent away the greateſt part of our neceſſary things to other countries, from whence in return we brought the materials of diſeaſes, folly, and vice, to ſpend among ourſelves. Hence it follows of neceſſity, that vaſt numbers of our people are compelled to ſeek their livelihood by begging, robbing, ſtealing, cheating, pimping, flattering, ſuborning, forſwearing, forging, gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, ſcribling, ſtar-gazing, poyſoning, whoring, canting, libelling, free-thinking, and the like occupations: every one of which terms I was at much pains to make him underſtand.

That *Wine* was not imported among us from foreign countries to ſupply the want of water, or other drinks, but becauſe it was a ſort of liquid, which made us merry by putting us out of our ſenſes, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raiſed our hopes, and baniſhed our fears; ſuſpended every office of reaſon for a time, and deprived us of the uſe of our limbs, till we fell into a profound ſleep; although it muſt be confeſſed, that we always awaked ſick and diſpirited; and that the uſe of this

this liquor filled us with diſeaſes, which made our lives uncomfortable and ſhort [a].

But beſide all this, the bulk of our people ſupported themſelves by furniſhing the neceſſities or conveniencies of life to the rich, and to each other. For inſtance, when I am at home, and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanſhip of an hundred tradeſmen; the building and furniture of my houſe employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another ſort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the ſick, having upon ſome occaſions informed his honour, that many of my crew had died of diſeaſes. But here it was with the utmoſt difficulty, that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could eaſily conceive, that a *Houyhnhnm* grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by ſome accident might hurt a limb: but that nature, who works all things to perfection, ſhould ſuffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought impoſſible, and deſired to know the reaſon of ſo unaccountable an evil. I told him, we fed on a thouſand things, which operated contrary to each other; that we eat when we were not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirſt; that we ſat whole nights drinking ſtrong liquors without eating a bit, which diſpoſed us to

[a] This account excites ideas of drunkenneſs very different from thoſe, which are conceived under the terms by which it is generally expreſſed.

ſloth, enflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digeſtion. That proſtitute female *yahoos* acquired a certain malady, which bred rottenneſs in the bones of thoſe who fell into their embraces; that this and many other diſeaſes were propagated from father to ſon; ſo that great numbers come into the world with complicated maladies upon them: that it would be endleſs to give him a catalogue of all diſeaſes incident to human bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or ſix hundred ſpread over every limb and joint; in ſhort, every part, external and inteſtine, having diſeaſes appropriated to itſelf. To remedy which there was a ſort of people bred up among us in the profeſſion, or pretence, of curing the ſick. And becauſe I had ſome ſkill in the faculty, I would in gratitude to his honour let him know the whole myſtery and method, by which they proceed.

Their fundamental is, that all diſeaſes ariſe from *repletion*; from whence they conclude, that a great *evacuation* of the body is neceſſary either through the natural paſſage, or upwards at the mouth. Their next buſineſs is from herbs, minerals, gums, oyls, ſhells, ſalts, juices, ſea-weed, excrements, barks of trees, ſerpents, toads, frogs, ſpiders, dead mens fleſh and bones, birds, beaſts, and fiſhes to form a compoſition for ſmell and taſte the moſt abominable, nauſeous, and deteſtable, they can poſſibly contrive, which the ſtomach immediately rejects with loathing; and this

this they call a *vomit*: or elſe from the ſame ſtore-houſe, with ſome other poyſonous additions, they command us to take in at the orifice *above*.or *below* (juſt as the phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed) a medicine equally annoying and diſguſtful to the bowels; which relaxing the belly, drives down all before it; and this they call a *purge*, or a *clyſter*. For nature (as the phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterior orifice only for the *intromiſſion* of ſolids and liquids, and the inferior poſterior for ejection; theſe artiſts ingeniouſly conſidering that in all diſeaſes nature is forced out of her ſeat, therefore to replace her in it, the body muſt be treated in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging the uſe of each orifice; forcing ſolids and liquids in at the *anus*, and making evacuations at the mouth.

But beſides real diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the phyſicians have invented imaginary cures; theſe have their ſeveral names, and ſo have the drugs that are proper for them; and with theſe our female *yahoos* are always infeſted.

One great excellency in this tribe is their ſkill at *prognoſticks*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their predictions in real diſeaſes, when they riſe to any degree of malignity, generally portending *death*, which is always in their power, when recovery is not: and therefore upon any unexpected ſigns of amendment after they have pronounced their ſentence, rather than be accuſed

cuſed as falſe prophets, they know how to approve their ſagacity to the world by a ſeaſonable doſe.

They are likewiſe of ſpecial uſe to huſbands and wives, who are grown weary of their mates; to eldeſt ſons, to great miniſters of ſtate, and often to princes.

I had formerly upon occaſion diſcourſed with my maſter upon the nature of *government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent conſtitution*, deſervedly the wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a *miniſter of ſtate*; he commanded me ſome time after to inform him, what ſpecies of *yahoo* I particularly meant by that appellation.

I told him, that a firſt or chief miniſter of ſtate, who was the perſon I intended to deſcribe, was a creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger; at leaſt, makes uſe of no other paſſions, but a violent deſire of wealth, power, and titles; that he applies his words to all uſes, except to the indication of his mind; that he never tells a *truth* but with an intent that you ſhould take it for a *lye*; nor a *lye*, but with a deſign that you ſhould take it for a *truth*; that thoſe he ſpeaks worſt of behind their backs are in the ſureſt way of preferment; and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others, or to yourſelf, you are from that day forlorn. The worſt mark you can receive is a *promiſe*, eſpecially when it is confirmed with an oath; after which

which every wiſe man retires, and gives over all hopes.

There are three methods, by which a man may riſe to be chief miniſter. The firſt is by knowing how with prudence to diſpoſe of a wife, a daughter, or a ſiſter: the ſecond by betraying or undermining his predeceſſor: and the third is, by a *furious Zeal* in public aſſemblies againſt the corruptions of the court. But a wiſe prince would rather chooſe to employ thoſe, who practiſe the laſt of theſe methods; becauſe ſuch zealots prove always the moſt obſequious and ſubſervient to the will and paſſions of their maſter. That theſe *Miniſters*, having all employments at their diſpoſal, preſerve themſelves in power by bribing the majority of a ſenate or great council; and at laſt by an expedient called an *act of indemnity* (whereof I deſcribed the nature to him) they ſecure themſelves from after reckonings, and retire from the public laden with the ſpoils of the nation.

The palace of a *chief miniſter* is a ſeminary to breed up others in his own trade: the pages, lacquies, and porter by imitating their maſter become *miniſters of ſtate* in their ſeveral diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three principal *ingredients*, of *inſolence*, *lying*, and *bribery*. Accordingly they have a *ſubaltern* court paid to them by perſons of the beſt rank; and ſometimes, by the force of dexterity and impudence, arrive through ſeveral gradations to be ſucceſſors to their lord.

He is uſually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the tunnels through which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, *in the laſt reſort*, the governors of the kingdom.

One day in diſcourſe my maſter, having heard me mention the *nobility* of my country, was pleaſed to make me a compliment, which I could not pretend to deſerve: that he was ſure I muſt have been born of ſome noble family, becauſe I far exceeded in ſhape, colour, and cleanlineſs all the *yahoos* of his nation, although I ſeemed to fail in ſtrength and agility, which muſt be imputed to my different way of living from thoſe other brutes; and beſides, I was not only endowed with the faculty of ſpeech, but likewiſe with ſome rudiments of reaſon, to a degree, that with all his acquaintance I paſſed for a prodigy.

He made me obſerve, that among the *Houyhnhnms*, the *white*, the *ſorrel*, and the *iron-grey*, were not ſo exactly ſhaped as the *bay*, the *dapple-grey*, and the *black*; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of ſervants, without ever aſpiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monſtrous and unnatural.

I made his honour my moſt humble acknowledgments for the good opinion he was pleaſed to conceive of me; but aſſured him at the ſame time, that my birth was of the lower ſort, having been born of plain honeſt parents,

rents, who were juſt able to give me a tolerable education: that *nobility* among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleneſs and luxury; that as ſoon as years will permit, they conſume their vigour, and contract odious diſeaſes among lewd females; and when their fortunes are almoſt ruined, they marry ſome woman of mean birth, diſagreeable perſon, and unſound conſtitution, merely for the ſake of money, whom they hate and deſpiſe. That the productions of ſuch marriages are generally ſcrophulous, ricketty, or deformed children; by which means the family ſeldom continues above three generations, unleſs the wife takes care to provide a healthy father among her neighbours or domeſtics in order to improve and continue the breed. That a weak diſeaſed body, a meagre countenance, and ſallow complexion are the true marks of *noble blood*; and a healthy robuſt appearance is ſo diſgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a *groom*, or a *coachman*. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with thoſe of his body, being a compoſition of ſpleen, dulneſs, ignorance, caprice, ſenſuality, and pride.

Without the conſent of this illuſtrious body no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered; and theſe *nobles* have likewiſe the deciſions of all our poſſeſſions, without appeal.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, *as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature.*

THE reader may be diſpoſed to wonder, how I could prevail on myſelf to give ſo free a repreſentation of my own ſpecies among a race of mortals, who are already too apt to conceive the vileſt opinion of human kind from that intire congruity betwixt me and their *yahoos*. But I muſt freely confeſs, that the many virtues of thoſe excellent *quadrupeds*, placed in oppoſite view to human corruptions, had ſo far opened my eyes, and enlarged my underſtanding, that I began to view the actions and paſſions of man in a very different light; and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which beſides it was impoſſible for me to do before a perſon of ſo acute a judgment as my maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand faults in myſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt perception before, and which with us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewiſe learned from his example an utter deteſtation of all falſhood or diſguiſe; and *truth* appeared ſo amiable to me,

me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal ſo candidly with the reader as to confeſs, that there was yet a much ſtronger motive for the freedom I took in my repreſentation of things. I had not been a year in this country, before I contracted ſuch a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm reſolution never to return to human kind, but to paſs the reſt of my life among theſe admirable *houyhnhnms* in the contemplation and practice of every virtue; where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that ſo great a felicity ſhould not fall to my ſhare. However it is now ſome comfort to reflect, that in what I ſaid of my countrymen, I *extenuated* their faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an examiner; and upon every article gave as *favourable* a turn, as the matter would bear. For indeed who is there alive, that will not be ſwayed by his byaſs and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the ſubſtance of ſeveral converſations I had with my maſter, during the greateſt part of the time I had the honour to be in his ſervice; but have indeed for brevity ſake omitted much more than is here ſet down.

When I had anſwered all his queſtions, and his curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied; he ſent for me one morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome diſtance (an honour which

which he had never before conferred upon me) he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole ſtory as far as it related both to myſelf and my country: that he looked upon us as a ſort of animals, to whoſe ſhare, by what accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall pittance of *reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other uſe, than by its aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had not given us: that we diſarmed ourſelves of the few abilities ſhe had beſtowed; had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original wants, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole lives in vain endeavours to ſupply them by our own inventions. That as to myſelf it was manifeſt, I had neither the ſtrength or agility of a common *yahoo*; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet; had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no uſe or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which was intended as a ſhelter from the ſun and the weather. Laſtly, That I could neither run with ſpeed, nor climb trees like my *brethren*, (as he called them) the *yahoos* in this country.

That our inſtitutions of *government* and *law* were plainly owing to our groſs defects in *reaſon*, and by conſequence in *virtue*; becauſe *reaſon* alone is ſufficient to govern a *rational* creature; which was therefore a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of my own people; although he manifeſtly perceived, that in order

to

to favour them I had concealed many particulars, and often *ſaid the thing which was not.*

He was the more confirmed in this opinion, becauſe he obſerved, that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other *yahoos*, except where it was to my real diſadvantage, in point of ſtrength, ſpeed, and activity, the ſhortneſs of my claws, and ſome other particulars where nature had no part; ſo from the repreſentation I had given him of our lives, our manners and our actions, he found as near a reſemblance in the diſpoſition of our minds. He ſaid the *yahoos* were known to hate one another, more than they did any different ſpecies of animals; and the reaſon uſually aſſigned was, the odiouſneſs of their own ſhapes, which all could ſee in the reſt but not in themſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwiſe in us to *cover* our bodies, and by that invention conceal many of our deformities from each other, which would elſe be hardly ſupportable. But he now found he had been miſtaken, and that the diſſentions of thoſe brutes in his country were owing to the ſame cauſe with ours, as I had deſcribed them. For if (ſaid he) you throw among five *yahoos* as much food as would be ſufficient for fifty, they will, inſtead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each ſingle one impatient to *have all to itſelf*; and therefore a ſervant was uſually employed to ſtand by, while they were feeding abroad, and thoſe kept at home

were tied at a diſtance from each other; that if a cow died of age or accident, before a *Houyhnhnm* could ſecure it for his own *yahoos*, thoſe in the neighbourhood would come in herds to ſeize it, and then would enſue ſuch a battle as I had deſcribed, with terrible wounds made by their claws on both ſides, although they ſeldom were able to kill one another for want of ſuch convenient inſtruments of death as we had invented. At other times the like battles have been fought between the *yahoos* of ſeveral neighbourhoods without any viſible cauſe: thoſe of one diſtrict watching all opportunities to ſurpriſe the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miſcarried, they return home, and for want of enemies engage in what I call a civil war among themſelves.

That in ſome fields of his country there are certain *ſhining ſtones* of ſeveral colours, whereof the *yahoos* are violently fond; and when part of theſe *ſtones* is fixed in the earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but ſtill looking round with great caution for fear their comrades ſhould find out their treaſure. My maſter ſaid he could never diſcover the reaſon of this unnatural appetite, or how theſe *ſtones* could be of any uſe to a *yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame principle of *avarice*, which I had aſcribed to mankind: That

That he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of theſe *ſtones* from the place, where one of his *yahoos* had buried it: whereupon the ſordid animal, miſſing his treaſure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miſerably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the reſt; began to pine away, would neither eat, nor ſleep, nor work, till he ordered a ſervant privately to convey the *ſtones* into the ſame hole, and hide them as before; which when his *yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his ſpirits, and good humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding-place, and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable brute *.

My maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved myſelf, that in the fields where the *ſhining ſtones* abound, the fierceſt and moſt frequent battles are fought, occaſioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring *yahoos*.

He ſaid, it was common, when two *yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *ſtone* in a field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my maſter would needs contend to have ſome kind of reſemblance with our *ſuits at law*; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him; ſince the deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us:

* Nothing can be ſaid to make avarice a greater reproach to mankind, except that it is a vice, which this deſcription will not cure.

becauſe the plaintiff and defendant there loſt nothing beſide the *ſtone* they contended for, whereas our *courts of equity* would never have diſmiſſed the cauſe, while either of them had any thing left.

My maſter continuing his diſcourſe ſaid, there was nothing that rendered the *yahoos* more odious, than their undiſtinguiſhing appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted fleſh of animals, or all mingled together: and it was peculiar in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or ſtealth at a greater diſtance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burſt, after which nature had pointed out to them a certain *root* that gave them a general evacuation.

There was alſo another kind of *root* very *juicy* but ſomewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *yahoos* ſought for with much eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great delight; it produced in them the ſame effects, that wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another; they would howl and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall aſleep in the mud.

I did indeed obſerve, that the *yahoos* were the only animals in this country ſubject to any diſeaſes; which however were much fewer than horſes have among us, and contracted not by any

any ill treatment they meet with, but by the naſtineſs, and greedineſs of that ſordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for thoſe maladies, which is borrowed from the name of the beaſt, and called *hnea-yahoo* or the *yahoo's evil*, and the cure preſcribed is a mixture of *their own dung* and *urine*, forcibly put down the *yahoo's* throat. This I have ſince often known to have been taken with ſucceſs, and do here freely recommend it to my countrymen, for the public good as an admirable ſpecific againſt all diſeaſes produced by repletion.

As to learning, government, arts, manufactures, and the like, my maſter confeſſed, he could find little or no reſemblance between the *yahoos* of that country and thoſe in ours. For he only meant to obſerve, what parity there was in our natures. He had heard indeed ſome curious *Houyhnhnms* obſerve, that in moſt herds there was a ſort of ruling *yahoo* (as among us there is generally ſome leading or principal ſtag in a park) who was always more *deformed* in body, and *miſchievous in diſpoſition*, than any of the reſt. That this *leader* had uſually a favourite as *like himſelf* as he could get, whoſe employment was to *lick his maſter's feet and poſteriors, and drive the female* yahoos *to his kennel* [a]; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of aſs's fleſh. This *favourite* is hated by the whole herd, and there-

[a] Flattery and pimping.

fore to protect himſelf keeps always *near the perſon of his leader*. He uſually continues in office, till a worſe can be found; but the very moment he is diſcarded, his ſucceſſor at the head of all the *yahoos* in that diſtrict, young and old, male and female, come in a body, and diſcharge their excrements upon him from head to foot. But how far this might be applicable to our *courts* and *favourites*, and *miniſters of ſtate*, my maſter ſaid I could beſt determine.

I durſt make no return to this malicious inſinuation, which debaſed human underſtanding below the ſagacity of a common *hound*, who hath judgment enough to diſtinguiſh and follow the cry of the *ableſt dog in the pack*, without being ever miſtaken.

My maſter told me, there were ſome qualities remarkable in the *yahoos*, which he had not obſerved me to mention, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the accounts I had given him of human kind; he ſaid, thoſe animals like other brutes had their females in common; but in this they differed, that the ſhe *yahoo* would admit the male, while ſhe was pregnant; and that the bees would quarrel and fight with the females, as fiercely as with each other. Both which practices were ſuch degrees of infamous brutality, as no other ſenſitive creature ever arrived at.

Another thing he wondered at in the *yahoos*, was their ſtrange diſpoſition to naſtineſs and dirt; whereas there appears to be a natural love

of cleanlineſs in all other animals. As to the two former accuſations, I was glad to let them paſs without any reply, becauſe I had not a word to offer upon them in defence of my ſpecies, which otherwiſe I certainly had done from my own inclinations. But I could have eaſily vindicated human kind from the imputation of ſingularity upon the laſt article, if there had been any *ſwine* in that country (as unluckily for me there were not) which, although it may be a *ſweeter quadruped* than a *yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in juſtice pretend to more cleanlineſs; and ſo his honour himſelf muſt have owned, if he had ſeen their filthy way of feeding, and their cuſtom of wallowing and ſleeping in the mud.

My maſter likewiſe mentioned another quality, which his ſervants had diſcovered in ſeveral *yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He ſaid, a fancy would ſometimes take a *yahoo* to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl and groan, and ſpurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water: nor did the ſervants imagine what could poſſibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was, to ſet him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himſelf. To this I was ſilent out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly diſcover the true ſeeds of *ſpleen*, which only ſeizeth on the *lazy*, the *luxurious*, and the *rich*; who if

they were forced to undergo the *ſame regimen*, I would undertake for the cure.

His honour had farther obſerved, that a female *yahoo* would often ſtand behind a bank or a buſh to gaze on the young males paſſing by, and then appear, and hide, uſing many antic geſtures and grimaces, at which time it was obſerved that ſhe had a moſt *offenſive ſmell*; and when any of the males advanced would ſlowly retire, looking often back, and with a counterfeit ſhew of fear run off into ſome convenient place, where ſhe knew the male would follow her.

At other times, if a female ſtranger came among them, three or four of her own ſex would get about her, and ſtare, and chatter, and grin, and ſmell her all over; and then turn off with geſtures, that ſeemed to expreſs contempt and diſdain.

Perhaps my maſter might refine a little in theſe ſpeculations, which he had drawn from what he obſerved himſelf, or had been told him by others: however I could not reflect without ſome amazement and much ſorrow, that the rudiments of *lewdneſs*, *coquetry*, *cenſure*, and *ſcandal* ſhould have place by inſtinct in womankind.

I expected every moment, that my maſter would accuſe the *yahoos* of thoſe unnatural appetites in both ſexes, ſo common among us. But nature, it ſeems, hath not been ſo expert a ſchool-miſtreſs; and theſe politer pleaſures are

are intirely the productions of art and reaſon on our ſide of the globe.

CHAP. VIII.

The author relates ſeveral particulars of the yahoos. *The great virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly.*

AS I ought to have underſtood human nature much better, than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the character he gave of the *yahoos* to myſelf, and my countrymen; and I believed, I could yet make farther diſcoveries from my own obſervation. I therefore often begged his honour to let me go among the herds of *yahoos* in the neighbourhood, to which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced, that the hatred I bore thoſe brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his honour ordered one of his ſervants, a ſtrong ſorrel nag, very honeſt and good-natured, to be my guard, without whoſe protection I durſt not undertake ſuch adventures. For I have already told the reader, how much I was peſtered by thoſe odious animals upon my firſt arrival. And I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four times of falling into their clutches, when I happened to ſtray at any diſtance without my hanger. And I have reaſon to believe they had ſome imagination

nation that I was of their own ſpecies, which I often aſſiſted myſelf by ſtripping up my ſleeves, and ſhewing my naked arms and breaſt in their ſight, when my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durſt, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkies, but ever with great ſigns of hatred; as a tame *jack-daw* with cap and ſtockings is always perſecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiouſly nimble from their infancy; however I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured by all marks of tenderneſs to make it quiet; but the little imp fell a ſqualling, and ſcratching, and biting, with ſuch violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noiſe, but finding the cub was ſafe (for away it ran) and my ſorrel nag being by, they durſt not venture near us. I obſerved the young animal's fleſh to ſmell very rank, and the ſtink was ſomewhat between a *weaſel* and a *fox*, but much more diſagreeable. I forgot another circumſtance (and perhaps I might have the reader's pardon, if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy excrements of a yellow liquid ſubſtance all over my cloaths; but by good fortune there was a ſmall brook hard by, where I waſhed myſelf as clean as I could; although I durſt not come into my maſter's preſence, until I were ſufficiently aired.

By

By what I could diſcover, the *yahoos* appear to be the moſt unteachable of all animals; their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burthens. Yet I am of opinion, this defect ariſeth chiefly from a perverſe, reſtive diſpoſition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are ſtrong and hardy, but of a cowardly ſpirit, and by conſequence inſolent, abject, and cruel. It is obſerved, that the *red haired* of both ſexes are more libidinous and miſchievous than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in ſtrength and activity.

The *Houyhnhnms* keep the *yahoos* for preſent uſe in huts not far from the houſe; but the reſt are ſent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat ſeveral kinds of herbs, and ſearch about for carrion, or ſometimes catch *weaſels* and *lubimubs* (a ſort of *wild rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails on the ſide of a riſing ground, wherein they lie by themſelves; only the kennels of the females are larger, ſufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They ſwim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fiſh, which the females carry home to their young. And upon this occaſion I hope the reader will pardon my relating an odd adventure.

Being one day abroad with my protector the ſorrel nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I entreated

entreated him to let me bathe in a river that was near. He conſented, and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark naked, and went down ſoftly into the ſtream. It happened that a young female *yahoo*, ſtanding behind a bank, ſaw the whole proceeding, and enflamed by deſire, as the nag and I conjectured, came running with all ſpeed, and leaped into the water within five yards of the place where I bathed. I was never in my life ſo terribly frighted; the nag was grazing at ſome diſtance, not ſuſpecting any harm. She embraced me after a moſt fulſome manner; I roared as loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towards me, whereupon ſhe quitted her graſp with the utmoſt reluctancy, and leaped upon the oppoſite bank, where ſhe ſtood gazing and howling all the time I was putting on my cloaths.

This was a matter of diverſion to my maſter and his family, as well as of mortification to myſelf. For now I could no longer deny, that I was a real *yahoo* in every limb and feature, ſince the females had a natural propenſity to me, as one of their own ſpecies: neither was the hair of this brute of a red colour (which might have been ſome excuſe for an appetite a little irregular) but black as a ſloe, and her countenance did not make an appearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of her kind: For, I think, ſhe could not be above eleven years old.

Having

Having lived three years in this country, the reader I ſuppoſe will expect that I ſhould, like other travellers, give him ſome account of the manners and cuſtoms of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal ſtudy to learn.

As theſe noble *Houyhnhnms* are endowed by nature with a general diſpoſition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature; ſo their grand maxim is, to cultivate *reaſon*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is *reaſon* among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plauſibility on both ſides of a queſtion; but ſtrikes you with immediate conviction; as it muſt needs do, where it is not mingled, obſcured, or diſcoloured, by paſſion and intereſt. I remember it was with extreme difficulty, that I could bring my maſter to underſtand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or how a point could be diſputable; becauſe *reaſon* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either. So that controverſies, wranglings, diſputes, and poſitiveneſs, in falſe or dubious propoſitions, are evils unknown among the *Houyhnhnms*. In the like manner, when I uſed to explain to him our ſeveral ſyſtems of *natural philoſophy*, he would laugh, that a creature pretending to *reaſon* ſhould value itſelf upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no uſe. Wherein he agreed intirely with the ſentiments of *Socrates*

crates as *Plato* delivers them; which I mention as the higheſt honour I can do that prince of philoſophers. I have often ſince reflected, what deſtruction ſuch a doctrine would make in the libraries of *Europe*; and how many paths to fame would be then ſhut up in the learned world.

Friendſhip and *benevolence* are the two principal virtues among the *Houyhnhnms* [a]; and theſe not confined to particular objects, but univerſal to the whole race. For a ſtranger from the remoteſt part is equally treated with the neareſt neighbour; and wherever he goes, looks upon himſelf as at home. They preſerve *decency* and *civility* in the higheſt degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *ceremony*. They have no fondneſs for their colts or foles, but the care they take in educating them proceedeth intirely from the dictates of *reaſon* [b]. And I obſerved my maſter to ſhew the ſame affection to his neighbour's iſſue, that he had for his own. They will have it that *nature* teaches them to love the whole ſpecies, and it is *reaſon* only that maketh a diſtinction of perſons, where there is a ſuperior degree of virtue [c].

When

[a] Their virtuous qualities are only negative. ORRERY.

[b] We here view the pure inſtincts of brutes, acting in their narrow ſphere, merely for their immediate preſervation. ORRERY.

[c] It may perhaps be thought ſomewhat ſtrange, that the ſenſe of the noble commentator ſhould appear to be directly oppoſite to that of the author, in the paſſages which theſe notes were intended to illuſtrate; but this apparent oppoſition may ariſe merely from their uſing the ſame word

When the matron *Houyhnhnms* have produced one of each ſex, they no longer accompany with their conſorts, except they loſe one of their iſſue by ſome caſualty, which very ſeldom happens: but in ſuch a caſe they meet again; or when the like accident befals a perſon whoſe wife is paſt bearing, ſome other couple beſtow him one of their own colts, and then go together again until the mother is pregnant. This caution is neceſſary to prevent the country from being over-burthened with numbers. But the race of inferior *Houyhnhnms*, bred up to be ſervants, is not ſo ſtrictly limited upon this article; theſe are allowed to produce three of each ſex to be domeſtics in the noble families.

In their marriages they are exactly careful to chooſe ſuch colours, as will not make any diſagreeable mixture in the breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the male, and *comelineſs* in the female; not upon the account of *love*, but to preſerve the race from degenerating; for where a female happens to excel in *ſtrength*, a conſort is choſen with regard to *comelineſs*.

Courtſhip, love, preſents, jointures, ſettlements, have no place in their thoughts; or terms whereby to expreſs them in their language. The young couple meet and are joined,

word in an oppoſite ſenſe; as by the word *candour*, his lordſhip always means a quality which inclines a man to put the worſt conſtruction upon the words and actions of another, and by *candour*, the dean always means juſt the contrary.

Compare *Orrery*, ſmall edit. p. 100. large edit. p. 146. laſt paragraph, with *Swift*'s apology for the *Tale of a Tub*, p. 3.

merely

merely becauſe it is the determination of their parents and friends: it is what they ſee done every day, and they look upon it as one of the neceſſary actions of a reaſonable being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchaſtity, was never heard of: And the married pair paſs their lives with the ſame friendſhip, and mutual benevolence, that they bear to all others of the ſame ſpecies, who come in their way; without jealouſy, fondneſs, quarrelling, or diſcontent.

In educating the youth of both ſexes their method is admirable, and highly deſerveth our imitation. Theſe are not ſuffered to taſte a grain of *oats*, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old; nor *milk*, but very rarely; and in ſummer they graze two hours in the morning, and as many in the evening, which their parents likewiſe obſerve; but the ſervants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their graſs is brought home, which they eat at the moſt convenient hours, when they can be beſt ſpared from work.

Temperance, *induſtry*, *exerciſe*, and *cleanlineſs*, are the leſſons equally enjoined to the young ones of both ſexes: and my maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in ſome articles of domeſtic management; whereby, as he truly obſerved, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world: and to truſt the care

of

of our children to ſuch uſeleſs animals, he ſaid, was yet a greater inſtance of brutality.

But the *Houyhnhnms* train up their youth to ſtrength, ſpeed, and hardineſs by exerciſing them in running races up and down ſteep hills, and over hard ſtony grounds, and when they are all in a ſweat, they are ordered to leap over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain diſtrict meet to ſhew their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of ſtrength and agility; where the victor is rewarded, with a ſong in his or her praiſe. On this feſtival the ſervants drive a herd of *yahoos* into the field laden with hay, and oats, and milk, for a repaſt to the *Houyhnhnms*; after which theſe brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noiſome to the aſſembly.

Every fourth year, at the *vernal equinox*, there is a repreſentative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our houſe, and continueth about five or ſix days. Here they enquire into the ſtate and condition of the ſeveral diſtricts; whether they abound, or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or *yahoos?* and wherever there is any want (which is but ſeldom) it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous conſent and contribution. Here likewiſe the regulation of children is ſettled: as for inſtance, if a *Houyhnhnm* hath two males, he changeth one of them with another that hath two females: and when a child hath been loſt by any caſualty, where

the mother is paſt breeding, it is determined what family in the diſtrict ſhall breed another to ſupply the loſs.

CHAP. IX.

A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.*

ONE of theſe grand aſſemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whither my maſter went as the repreſentative of our diſtrict. In this council was reſumed their old debate, and indeed the only debate that ever happened in their country; whereof my maſter after his return gave me a very particular account.

The queſtion to be debated was, whether the *yahoos* ſhould be exterminated from the face of the earth. One of the *members* for the affirmative offered ſeveral arguments of great ſtrength and weight; alledging, that as the *yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deformed animal which nature ever produced, ſo they were the moſt reſtive and indocible, miſchievous and malicious: they would privately ſuck the teats of the *Houyhnhnms* cows; kill and devour their cats, trample down their oats and graſs, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thouſand other extravagancies.

cies. He took notice of a general tradition, that *yahoos* had not been always in their country; but that many ages ago two of theſe brutes appeared together upon a mountain; whether produced by the heat of the ſun upon corrupted mud and ſlime, or from the ooze and froth of the ſea, was never known: that theſe *yahoos* engendered, and their brood in a ſhort time grew ſo numerous as to over-run and infeſt the whole nation: that the *Houyhnhnms* to get rid of this evil made a general hunting, and at laſt encloſed the whole herd; and deſtroying the elder, every *Houyhnhnm* kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to ſuch a degree of tameneſs, as an animal ſo ſavage by nature can be capable of acquiring; uſing them for draught and carriage: that there ſeemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that thoſe creatures could not be *Ylnhniamſhy* (or *aborigines* of the land) becauſe of the violent hatred the *Houyhnhnms*, as well as all other animals, bore them; which, although their evil diſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived at ſo high a degree, if they had been *Aborigines*; or elſe they would have long ſince been rooted out: that the inhabitants, taking a fancy to uſe the ſervice of the *yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of *aſſes*, which are a comely animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive ſmell, ſtrong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body; and, if their braying

be no agreeable ſound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the *yahoos*.

Several others declared their ſentiments to the ſame purpoſe, when my maſter propoſed an expedient to the aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the *honourable member*, who ſpoke before; and affirmed, that the two *yahoos*, ſaid to be firſt ſeen among them, had been driven thither over the ſea; that coming to land, and being forſaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and degenerating by degrees, became in proceſs of time much more ſavage, than thoſe of their own ſpecies in the country from whence theſe two originals came. The reaſon of this aſſertion was, that he had now in his poſſeſſion a certain wonderful *yahoo* (meaning myſelf) which moſt of them had heard of and many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, how he firſt found me; that my body was all covered with an artificial compoſure of the ſkins and hairs of other animals: that I ſpoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: that I had related to him the accidents, which brought me thither; that, when he ſaw me without my covering, I was an exact *yahoo* in every part, only of a whiter colour, leſs hairy, and with ſhorter claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to perſuade him, that in my own and other countries the *yahoos* acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the *Houyhnhnms* in ſervitude: that he obſerved in me all the qualities of a *yahoo*, only a little more

more civilized by ſome tincture of reaſon; which however was in a degree as far inferior to the *Houyhnhnm* race, as the *yahoos* of their country were to me: that, among other things, I mentioned a cuſtom we had of *caſtrating Houyhnhnms* when they were young in order to render them tame; that the operation was eaſy and ſafe; that it was no ſhame to learn wiſdom from brutes, as induſtry is taught by the ant, and building by the ſwallow (for ſo I tranſlate the word *lyhannh*, although it be a much larger fowl:) that this invention might be practiſed upon the younger *yahoos* here, which, beſides rendering them tractable and fitter for uſe, would in an age put an end to the whole ſpecies without deſtroying life: that in the mean time the *Houyhnhnms* ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivate the breed of aſſes, which as they are in all reſpects more valuable brutes, ſo they have this advantage, to be fit for ſervice at five years old, which the others are not till twelve.

This was all my maſter thought fit to tell me at that time, of what paſſed in the grand council. But he was pleaſed to conceal one particular, which related perſonally to myſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy effect, as the reader will know in its proper place, and from whence I date all the ſucceeding misfortunes of my life.

The *Houyhnhnms* have no letters, and conſequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any mo-

ment among a people ſo well united, naturally diſpoſed to every virtue, wholly governed by reaſon, and cut off from all commerce with other nations; the hiſtorical part is eaſily preſerved without burthening their memories. I have already obſerved that they are ſubject to no diſeaſes, and therefore can have no need of phyſicians. However, they have excellent medicines compoſed of herbs to cure accidental bruiſes and cuts in the paſtern or frog of the foot by ſharp ſtones, as well as other maims and hurts in the ſeveral parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the ſun and the moon, but uſe no ſubdiviſions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of thoſe two luminaries, and underſtand the nature of *eclipſes*; and this is the utmoſt progreſs of their *aſtronomy*.

In *poetry* they muſt be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the juſtneſs of their ſimilies, and the minuteneſs as well as exactneſs of their deſcriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verſes abound very much in both of theſe; and uſually contain either ſome exalted notions of friendſhip and benevolence, or the praiſes of thoſe, who were victors in races and other bodily exerciſes. Their buildings, although very rude and ſimple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old looſens in the root, and falls with the firſt ſtorm; it grows very ſtrait, and being pointed like ſtakes,

ſtakes, with a ſharp ſtone (for the *Houyhnhnms* know not the uſe of iron) they ſtick them erect in the ground about ten inches aſunder, and then weave in oat-ſtraw, or ſometimes wattles, betwixt them. The roof is made after the ſame manner, and ſo are the doors.

The *Houyhnhnms* uſe the hollow part, between the paſtern and the hoof, of their fore-feet, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity, than I could at firſt imagine. I have ſeen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpoſe) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands in the ſame manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which by grinding againſt other ſtones they form into inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of theſe flints they likewiſe cut their hay, and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in ſeveral fields: the *yahoos* draw home the ſheaves in carriages, and the ſervants tread them in certain covered hutts to get out the grain, which is kept in ſtores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden veſſels, and bake the former in the ſun.

If they can avoid caſualties, they die only of old-age, and are buried in the obſcureſt places that can be found, their friends and relations expreſſing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying perſon diſcover the leaſt regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home

from a viſit to one of his neighbours. I remember my maſter having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his houſe upon ſome affair of importance, on the day fixed the miſtreſs and her two children came very late; ſhe made two excuſes, firſt for her huſband, who, as ſhe ſaid, happened that very morning to *Ihnuwnh*. The word is ſtrongly expreſſive in their language, but not eaſily rendered into *engliſh*; it ſignifies, *to retire to his firſt mother*. Her excuſe for not coming ſooner was, that her huſband dying late in the morning, ſhe was a good while conſulting her ſervants about a convenient place where his body ſhould be laid; and I obſerved, ſhe behaved herſelf at our houſe as chearfully as the reſt: ſhe died about three months after.

They live generally to ſeventy, or ſeventy-five years, very ſeldom to fourſcore: ſome weeks before their death they feel a gradual decay; but without pain. During this time they are much viſited by their friends, becauſe they cannot go abroad with their uſual eaſe and ſatisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the viſits that have been made them by thoſe, who are neareſt in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient ſledge drawn by *yahoos*; which vehicle they uſe, not only upon this occaſion, but when they grow old, upon long journies, or when they are lamed by any accident. And therefore when the dying *Houyhnhnms* return thoſe

viſits,

viſits, they take a ſolemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to ſome remote part of the country, where they deſigned to paſs the reſt of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth obſerving, that the *Houyhnhnms* have no word in their language to expreſs any thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow from the deformities, or ill qualities of the *yahoos*. Thus they denote the folly of a ſervant, an omiſſion of a child, a ſtone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unſeaſonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of *yahoo*. For inſtance, *hhnm yahoo, whnaholm yahoo, ynlhmndwihlma yahoo*, and an ill contrived houſe, *ynholmhnmrohlnw yahoo*.

I could with great pleaſure enlarge farther upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people; but intending in a ſhort time to publiſh a volume by itſelf expreſly upon that ſubject, I refer the reader thither. And in the mean time, proceed to relate my own ſad cataſtrophe.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The author's oeconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. *His great improvement in virtue by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a canoo by the help of a fellow ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture.*

I Had ſettled my little oeconomy to my own heart's content. My maſter had ordered a room to be made for me after their manner about ſix yards from the houſe; the ſides and floors of which I plaiſtered with clay, and covered with ruſh-matts of my own contriving; I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a ſort of ticking: this I filled with the feathers of ſeveral birds I had taken with ſpringes made of *yahoos* hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the ſorrel nag helping me in the groſſer and more laborious part. When my cloaths were worn to rags, I made myſelf others with the ſkins of rabbets, and of a certain beautiful animal about the ſame ſize, called *nnuhnoh*, the ſkin of which is covered with a fine down. Of theſe I alſo made very tolerable ſtockings. I ſoaled my ſhoes with wood, which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper-

per-leather; and when this was worn out I ſupplied it with the ſkins of *yahoos* dried in the ſun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or eat with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of theſe two maxims, *That nature is very eaſily ſatisfied*; and, *That neceſſity is the mother of invention.* I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind; I did not feel the treachery or inconſtancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a ſecret or open enemy. I had no occaſion of bribing, flattering, or pimping, to procure the favour of any great man, or of his minion. I wanted no fence againſt fraud or oppreſſion; here was neither phyſician to deſtroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accuſations againſt me for hire: here were no gibers, cenſurers, backbiters, pick-pockets, highway-men, houſe-breakers, attornies, bawds, buffoons, gameſters, politicians, wits, ſplenatics, tedious talkers, controvertiſts, raviſhers, murderers, robbers, virtuoſoes; no leaders or followers of party and faction; no encouragers to vice by ſeducement or examples; no dungeon, axes, gibbets, whipping-poſts, or pillories; no cheating ſhopkeepers or mechanics; no pride, vanity, or affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, ſtrolling whores, or poxes; no ranting, lewd, expenſive wives; no ſtupid, proud pedants; no importunate, over-bearing, quarrelſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſwearing companions; no ſcoundrels

drels raiſed from the duſt upon the merit of their vices, or nobility thrown into it on account of their virtues; no lords, fidlers, judges, or dancing-maſters.

I had the favour of being admitted to ſeveral *Houyhnhnms*, who came to viſit or dine with my maſter; where his honour graciouſly ſuffered me to wait in the room, and liſten to their diſcourſe. Both he and his company would often deſcend to aſk me queſtions, and receive my anſwers. I had alſo ſometimes the honour of attending my maſter in his viſits to others. I never preſumed to ſpeak, except in anſwer to a queſtion; and then I did it with inward regret, becauſe it was a loſs of ſo much time for improving myſelf: but I was infinitely delighted with the ſtation of an humble auditor in ſuch converſations, where nothing paſſed but what was uſeful, expreſſed in the fewеſt and moſt ſignificant words: where (as I have already ſaid) the greateſt *decency* was obſerved without the leaſt degree of ceremony; where no perſon ſpoke without being pleaſed himſelf, and pleaſing his companions; where there was no interruption, tediouſneſs, heat, or difference of ſentiments. They have a notion, that, when people are met together, a ſhort ſilence doth much improve converſation: this I found to be true; for during thoſe little intermiſſions of talk new ideas would ariſe in their minds, which very much enlivened the diſcourſe. Their ſubjects are generally on friendſhip and benevolence, on order and oeconomy;

nomy; ſometimes upon the viſible operations of nature, or ancient traditions; upon the bounds and limits of virtue; upon the unerring rules of reaſon, or upon ſome determinations to be taken at the next great aſſembly; and often upon the various excellencies of *poetry*. I may add without vanity, that my preſence often gave them ſufficient matter for diſcourſe, becauſe it afforded my maſter an occaſion of letting his friends into the hiſtory of me and my country, upon which they were all pleaſed to deſcant in a manner not very advantageous to human kind; and for that reaſon I ſhall not repeat what they ſaid: only I may be allowed to obſerve, that his honour to my great admiration appeared to underſtand the nature of *yahoos*, much better than myſelf. He went through all our vices and follies, and diſcovered many, which I had never mentioned to him, by only ſuppoſing what qualities a *yahoo* of their country with a ſmall proportion of reaſon might be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too much probability, how vile as well as miſerable ſuch a creature muſt be.

I freely confeſs, that all the little knowledge I have of any value, was acquired by the lectures I received from my maſter, and from hearing the diſcourſes of him and his friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt aſſembly in *Europe*. I admired the ſtrength, comelineſs, and ſpeed of the inhabitants; and ſuch a conſtellation

ſtellation of virtues, in ſuch amiable perſons, produced in me the higheſt veneration. At firſt indeed I did not feel that natural awe, which the *yahoos* and all other animals bear towards them; but it grew upon me by degrees, much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful love and gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my ſpecies.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I conſidered them as they really were, *yahoos* in ſhape and diſpoſition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of ſpeech; but making no other uſe of reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe vices, whereof their brethren in this country had only the ſhare that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain, I turned away my face in horror and deteſtation of myſelf; and could better endure the ſight of a common *yahoo*, than of my own perſon. By converſing with the *Houyhnhnms*, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and geſture, which is now grown into an habit; and my friends often tell me in a blunt way, that *I trot like a horſe*; which however I take for a great compliment: neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the *Houyhnhnms*, and hear myſelf ridiculed on that account without the leaſt mortification.

In

In the midſt of all this happineſs, and when I looked upon myſelf to be fully ſettled for life, my maſter ſent for me one morning a little earlier than his uſual hour. I obſerved by his countenance that he was in ſome perplexity, and at a loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort ſilence, he told me, he did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay; that in the laſt general aſſembly, when the affair of the *yahoos* was entered upon, the repreſentatives had taken offence at his keeping a *yahoo* (meaning myſelf) in his family, more like a *Houyhnhnm*, than a brute animal. That he was known frequently to converſe with me, as if he could receive ſome advantage or pleaſure in my company: that ſuch a practice was not agreeable to reaſon or nature, or a thing ever heard of before among them. The aſſembly did therefore *exhort* him either to employ me like the reſt of my ſpecies, or command me to ſwim back to the place from whence I came. That the firſt of theſe expedients was utterly rejected by all the *Houyhnhnms*, who had ever ſeen me at his houſe or their own: for they alledged, that becauſe I had ſome rudiments of reaſon, added to the natural pravity of thoſe animals, it was to be feared, I might be able to ſeduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to deſtroy the *Houyhnhnms* cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averſe from labour.

My

My maſter added, that he was daily preſſed by the *Houyhnhnms* of the neighbourhood to have the aſſembly's *exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impoſſible for me to ſwim to another country; and therefore wiſhed I would contrive ſome ſort of vehicle reſembling thoſe I had deſcribed to him, that might carry me on the ſea; in which work I ſhould have the aſſiſtance of his own ſervants, as well as thoſe of his neighbours. He concluded, that for his own part he could have been content to keep me in his ſervice as long as I lived; becauſe he found I had cured myſelf of ſome bad habits and diſpoſitions by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the *Houyhnhnms*.

I ſhould here obſerve to the reader, that a decree of the general aſſembly in this country is expreſſed by the word *hnhloayn*, which ſignifies an *exhortation*, as near as I can render it: for they have no conception how a rational creature can be *compelled*, but only adviſed, or *exhorted*; becauſe no perſon can diſobey reaſon without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was ſtruck with the utmoſt grief and deſpair at my maſter's diſcourſe; and being unable to ſupport the agonies I was under, I fell into a ſwoon at his feet: when I came to myſelf, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead (for theſe people are ſubject to no ſuch imbecillities of nature.) I anſwered in a faint voice,

voice, that death would have been too great an happineſs; that although I could not blame the aſſembly's *exhortation*, or the urgency of his friends; yet in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might conſiſt with reaſon to have been leſs rigorous: that I could not ſwim a league, and probably the neareſt land to theirs might be diſtant above an hundred: that many materials, neceſſary for making a ſmall veſſel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country, which however I would attempt in obedience and gratitude to his honour, although I concluded the thing to be impoſſible, and therefore looked on myſelf as already devoted to deſtruction: that the certain proſpect of an unnatural death was the leaſt of my evils: for ſuppoſing I ſhould eſcape with life by ſome ſtrange adventure, how could I think with temper of paſſing my days among *yahoos*, and relapſing into my old corruptions for want of examples to lead and keep me within the paths of virtue: that I knew too well upon what ſolid reaſons all the determinations of the wiſe *Houyhnhnms* were founded, not to be ſhaken by arguments of mine, a miſerable *yahoo*; and therefore, after preſenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his ſervants aſſiſtance in making a veſſel, and deſiring a reaſonable time for ſo difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preſerve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to *England*, was not without hopes of being uſeful to my own ſpecies by celebrating the praiſes

of the renowned *Houyhnhnms*, and propoſing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My maſter in a few words made me a very gracious reply, allowed me the ſpace of two *months* to finiſh my boat; and ordered the ſorrel nag, my fellow-ſervant (for ſo at this diſtance I may preſume to call him) to follow my inſtructions; becauſe I told my maſter, that his help would be ſufficient, and I knew he had a tenderneſs for me.

In his company, my firſt buſineſs was to go to that part of the coaſt, where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be ſet on ſhore. I got upon a heighth, and looking on every ſide into the ſea, fancied I ſaw a ſmall iſland towards the *north-eaſt*: I took out my pocket-glaſs, and could then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the ſorrel nag to be only a blue cloud: for as he had no conception of any country beſide his own, ſo he could not be ſo expert in diſtinguiſhing remote objects at ſea, as we who ſo much converſe in that element.

After I had diſcovered this iſland, I conſidered no farther; but reſolved, if poſſible, be the firſt place of my baniſhment, leaving the conſequence to fortune.

I returned home, and conſulting with the ſorrel nag, we went into a copſe at ſome diſtance, where I with my knife, and he with a ſharp flint faſtened very artificially after their manner to a wooden handle, cut down ſeveral oak wattles, about the thickneſs of a walking-

ſtaff,

ſtaff, and ſome larger pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular deſcription of my own mechanics; let it ſuffice to ſay, that in ſix weeks time with the help of the ſorrel nag, who performed the parts that required moſt labour, I finiſhed a ſort of *indian* canoo, but much larger, covering it with the ſkins of *yahoos* well ſtitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My ſail was likewiſe compoſed of the ſkins of the ſame animal; but I made uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provided myſelf with four paddles. I laid in a ſtock of boiled fleſh, of rabbets and fowls; and took with me two veſſels, one filled with milk, and the other with water.

I tried my canoo in a large pond near my maſter's houſe, and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping all the chinks with *yahoos* tallow, till I found it ſtanch, and able to bear me and my freight. And, when it was as compleat as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by *yahoos* to the ſea-ſide, under the conduct of the ſorrel nag, and another ſervant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my maſter and lady and the whole family, my eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite ſunk with grief. But his honour out of curioſity, and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without vanity) partly out of kindneſs, was determined to ſee

me in my canoo; and got ſeveral of his neighbouring friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide, and then obſerving the wind very fortunately bearing towards the iſland, to which I intended to ſteer my courſe, I took a ſecond leave of my maſter: but, as I was going to proſtrate myſelf to kiſs his hoof, he did me the honour to raiſe it gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured for mentioning this laſt particular. Detractors are pleaſed to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a perſon ſhould deſcend to give ſo great a mark of diſtinction to a creature ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how apt ſome travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary favours they have received. But, if theſe cenſurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous diſpoſition of the *Houyhnhnms*, they would ſoon change their opinion.

I paid my reſpects to the reſt of the *Houyhnhnms* in his honour's company; then getting into my canoo I puſhed off from ſhore.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, *hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized and carried by force into a* portugueze *ſhip. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at* England.

I Began this deſperate voyage on *February* 15, 1714-15, at 9 o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable; however I made uſe at firſt only of my paddles; but conſidering I ſhould ſoon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to ſet up my little ſail; and thus with the help of the tide I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could gueſs. My maſter and his friends continued on the ſhore, till I was almoſt out of ſight; and I often heard the ſorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, *hnuy illa nyha majah yahoo*, Take care of thyſelf gentle *yahoo*.

My deſign was, if poſſible, to diſcover ſome ſmall iſland uninhabited, yet ſufficient by my labour to furniſh me with the neceſſaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happineſs, than to be firſt miniſter in the politeſt court of *europe*; ſo horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the ſociety and under the government of *yahoos*. For, in ſuch a ſolitude as I deſired, I could at leaſt en-

joy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of those inimitable *Houyhnhnms* without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own species.

The reader may remember what I related, when my crew conspired against me, and confined me to my cabbin. How I continued there several weeks without knowing what course we took; and when I was put a-shoar in the long-boat, how the sailors told me with oaths, whether true or false, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees *southward* of the *Cape of Good-Hope*, or about 45 degrees *southern* latitude, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, being I supposed to the *south-east* in their intended voyage to *Madagascar*. And although this were but little better than conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course *eastward*, hoping to reach the *south-west* coast of *New-Holland*, and perhaps some such island as I desired lying *westward* of it. The wind was full *west*, and by six in the evening I computed I had gone *eastward* at least eighteen leagues; when I spied a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock with one creek naturally arched by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoo, and climbing a part of the rock I could plainly discover land to the *east*, extending from *south* to *north*. I lay all night

in

in my canoo; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in ſeven hours to the *ſouth-eaſt* point of *New-Holland*. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained, that the *maps* and *charts* place this country at leaſt three degrees more to the *eaſt*, than it really is; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend, Mr. *Herman Moll*, and gave him my reaſons for it, although he hath rather choſen to follow other authors.

I ſaw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found ſome ſhell-fiſh on the ſhore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a fire for fear of being diſcovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oyſters and limpits to ſave my own proviſions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day venturing out early a little too far, I ſaw twenty or thirty natives upon a heighth not above five hundred yards from me. They were ſtark naked, men, women, and children round a fire, as I could diſcover by the ſmoke. One of them ſpied me, and gave notice to the reſt; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haſte I could to the ſhore, and getting into my canoo ſhoved off: the ſavages obſerving me retreat ran after me; and, before I could get far enough into the

ſea, diſcharged an arrow which wounded me deeply on the inſide of my left knee (I ſhall carry the mark to my grave.) I apprehended the arrow might be poiſoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day) I made a ſhift to ſuck the wound, and dreſs it as well as I could.

I was at a loſs what to do, for I durſt not return to the ſame landing-place, but ſtood to the *north*, and was forced to paddle; for the wind, though very gentle, was againſt me, blowing *north-weſt*. As I was looking about for a ſecure landing-place, I ſaw a ſail to the *north-north-eaſt*, which appearing every minute more viſible, I was in ſome doubt, whether I ſhould wait for them or no; but at laſt my deteſtation of the *yahoo* race prevailed; and turning my canoo I ſailed and paddled together to the *ſouth*, and got into the ſame creek, from whence I ſet out in the morning, chuſing rather to truſt myſelf among theſe *barbarians*, than live with *European yahoos*. I drew up my canoo as cloſe as I could to the ſhore, and hid myſelf behind a ſtone by the little brook, which, as I have already ſaid, was excellent water.

The ſhip came within half a league of this creek, and ſent out her long-boat with veſſels to take in freſh water (for the place, it ſeems, was very well known) but I did not obſerve it, till the boat was almoſt on ſhore; and it was too late to ſeek another hiding-place. The ſeamen at their landing obſerved my canoo, and rummaging

rummaging it all over, eaſily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, ſearched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at laſt they found me flat on my face behind the ſtone. They gazed a while in admiration at my ſtrange uncouth dreſs; my coat made of ſkins, my wooden ſoaled ſhoes, and my furred ſtockings; from whence however they concluded, I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the ſeamen, in *portugueze*, bid me riſe, and aſked who I was. I underſtood that language very well, and getting upon my feet ſaid I was a poor *yahoo* baniſhed from the *Houyhnhnms*, and deſired they would pleaſe to let me depart. They admired to hear me anſwer them in their own tongue, and ſaw by my complexion, I muſt be an *European*; but were at a loſs to know what I meant by *yahoos*, and *Houyhnhnms*, and at the ſame time fell a laughing at my ſtrange tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the neighing of a horſe. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred: I again deſired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoo; but they laid hold on me, deſiring to know, what country I was of? whence I came? with many other queſtions. I told them I was born in *England*, from whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, ſince I meant them no harm, but was a poor *yahoo*, ſeeking ſome deſolate

place

place where to paſs the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or ſaw any thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as monſtrous, as if a dog or a cow ſhould ſpeak in *England*, or a *yahoo* in *Houyhnhnm-land*. The honeſt *Portugueze* were equally amazed at my ſtrange dreſs, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which however they underſtood very well. They ſpoke to me with great humanity, and ſaid they were ſure the captain would carry me *gratis* to *Liſbon*, from whence I might return to my own country; that two of the ſeamen would go back to the ſhip, inform the captain of what they had ſeen, and receive his orders; in the mean time, unleſs I would give my ſolemn oath not to fly, they would ſecure me by force. I thought it beſt to comply with their propoſal. They were very curious to know my ſtory, but I gave them very little ſatisfaction; and they all conjectured, that my misfortunes had impaired my reaſon. In two hours the boat, which went loaden with veſſels of water, returned with the captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to preſerve my liberty; but all was in vain, and the men having tied me with cords heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ſhip, and from thence into the captain's cabbin.

His name was *Pedro de Mendez*; he was a very courteous and generous perſon; he entreated

treated me to give ſome account of myſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid, I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging things, that I wondered to find ſuch civilities from a *yahoo*. However, I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very ſmell of him and his men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own canoo; but he ordered me a chicken, and ſome excellent wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to bed in a very clean cabbin. I would not undreſs myſelf, but lay on the bed-cloaths, and in half an hour ſtole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the ſide of the ſhip was going to leap into the ſea, and ſwim for my life, rather than continue among *yahoos*. But one of the ſeamen prevented me, and having informed the captain, I was chained to my cabbin.

After dinner *Don Pedro* came to me, and deſired to know my reaſon for ſo deſperate an attempt; aſſured me, he only meant to do me all the ſervice he was able, and ſpoke ſo very movingly, that at laſt I deſcended to treat him like an animal, which had ſome little portion of reaſon. I gave him a very ſhort relation of my voyage; of the conſpiracy againſt me by my own men; of the country where they ſet me on ſhore, and of my five years reſidence there. All which he looked upon, as if it were a dream or a viſion; whereat I took great offence; for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying ſo peculiar to *yahoos* in all countries where they

they preſide, and conſequently the diſpoſition of ſuſpecting truth in others of their own ſpecies. I aſked him whether it were the cuſtom in his country to *ſay the thing which was not?* I aſſured him, I had almoſt forgot what he meant by falſehood, and, if I had lived a thouſand years in *Houyhnhnm-land*, I ſhould never have heard a lye from the meaneſt ſervant; that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no; but however in return for his favours, I would give ſo much allowance to the corruption of his nature, as to anſwer any objection he would pleaſe to make, and then he might eaſily diſcover the truth.

The captain, a wiſe man, after many endeavours to catch me tripping in ſome part of my ſtory, at laſt began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, that, ſince I profeſſed ſo inviolable an attachment to truth, I muſt give him my word and honour to bear him company in this voyage without attempting any thing againſt my life, or elſe he would continue me a priſoner till we arrived at *Liſbon*. I gave him the promiſe he required; but at the ſame time proteſted, that I would ſuffer the greateſt hardſhips, rather than return to live among *yahoos*.

Our voyage paſſed without any conſiderable accident. In gratitude to the captain I ſometimes ſat with him at his earneſt requeſt, and ſtrove to conceal my antipathy againſt human kind, although it often broke out; which he ſuffered to paſs without obſervation. But the

greateſt part of the day I confined myſelf to my cabbin to avoid ſeeing any of the crew. The captain had often entreated me to ſtrip myſelf of my ſavage dreſs, and offered to lend me the beſt ſuit of cloaths he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myſelf with any thing that had been on the back of a *yahoo*. I only deſired he would lend me two clean ſhirts, which, having been waſhed ſince he wore them, I believed would not ſo much defile me. Theſe I changed every ſecond day, and waſhed them myſelf.

We arrived at *Liſbon*, *Nov.* 5, 1715. At our landing the captain forced me to cover myſelf with his cloak to prevent the rabble from crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own houſe; and at my earneſt requeſt he led me up to the higheſt room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all perſons what I had told him of the *Houyhnhnms*; becauſe the leaſt hint of ſuch a ſtory would not only draw numbers of people to ſee me, but probably put me in danger of being impriſoned or burnt by the *inquiſition*. The captain perſuaded me to accept a ſuit of cloaths newly made; but I would not ſuffer the taylor to take my meaſure; however, *Don Pedro* being almoſt of my ſize, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other neceſſaries, all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours, before I would uſe them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three ſervants, none of which were ſuffered to attend

tend at meals; and his whole deportment was ſo obliging, added to very good *human* underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the ſtreet, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he ſeduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually leſſened, but my hatred and contempt ſeemed to encreaſe. I was at laſt bold enough to walk the ſtreet in his company, but kept my noſe well ſtopped with rue, or ſometimes with tobacco.

In ten days *Don Pedro*, to whom I had given ſome account of my domeſtic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conſcience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me, there was an *engliſh* ſhip in the port juſt ready to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He ſaid it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch a ſolitary iſland as I had deſired to live in; but I might command in my own houſe, and paſs my time in a manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complied at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left *Liſbon* the 24th day of *November* in an *engliſh* merchant-man, but, who was the maſter, I never enquired. *Don Pedro* accompanied me to the ſhip, and lent me twenty pounds.

pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this laſt voyage I had no commerce with the maſter, or any of his men; but pretending I was ſick kept cloſe in my cabbin. On the 5th of *December*, 1715, we caſt anchor in the *Downs* about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got ſafe to my houſe at *Rotherhith*.

My wife and family received me with great ſurprize and joy, becauſe they concluded me certainly dead; but I muſt freely confeſs the ſight of them filled me only with hatred, diſguſt, and contempt; and the more by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although, ſince my unfortunate exile from the *Houyhnhnm* country, I had compelled myſelf to tolerate the ſight of *yahoos*, and to converſe with *Don Pedro de Mendez*; yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of thoſe exalted *Houyhnhnms*. And when I began to conſider, that by copulating with one of the *yahoo*-ſpecies I had become a parent of more, it ſtruck me with the utmoſt ſhame, confuſion, and horror.

As ſoon as I entered the houſe, my wife took me in her arms, and kiſſed me; at which, having not been uſed to the touch of that odious animal for ſo many years, I fell into a ſwoon for almoſt an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years ſince my laſt return to *England*: during the firſt year I could not endure my wife or children in my preſence; the very

very ſmell of them was intolerable; much leſs could I ſuffer them to eat in the ſame room. To this hour they dare not preſume to touch my bread, or drink out of the ſame cup; neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The firſt money I laid out was to buy two young ſtone-horſes, which I keep in a good ſtable, and next to them the groom is my greateſt favourite; for I feel my ſpirits revived by the ſmell he contracts in the ſtable. My horſes underſtand me tolerably well; I converſe with them at leaſt four hours every day. They are ſtrangers to bridle or ſaddle; they live in great amity with me, and friendſhip to each other.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection anſwered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his laſt leave of the reader; propoſeth his manner of living for the future; gives good advice and concludeth.

THUS gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful hiſtory of my travels for ſixteen years and above ſeven months; wherein I have not been ſo ſtudious of ornament as of truth. I could perhaps, like others, have aſtoniſhed thee with ſtrange improbable tales; but I rather choſe to relate plain matter of fact in the ſimpleſt manner and ſtyle; becauſe my principal deſign was to inform, and not to amuſe thee.

It is eaſy for us who travel into remote countries, which are ſeldom viſited by *engliſhmen* or other *europeans*, to form deſcriptions of wonderful animals both at ſea and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim ſhould be to make men wiſer and better, and to improve

their minds by the bad, as well as good example, of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wiſh a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publiſh his voyages, ſhould be obliged to make oath before the *lord high Chancellor*, that all he intended to print was abſolutely true to the beſt of his knowledge; for then the world would no longer be deceived, as it uſually is; while ſome writers, to make their works paſs the better upon the public, impoſe the groſſeſt falſities on the unwary reader. I have peruſed ſeveral books of travels with great delight in my younger days; but having ſince gone over moſt parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own obſervation, it hath given me a great diſguſt againſt this part of reading, and ſome indignation to ſee the credulity of mankind ſo impudently abuſed. Therefore, ſince my acquaintance were pleaſed to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I impoſed on myſelf as a maxim never to be ſwerved from, that I would *ſtrictly adhere to truth*; neither indeed can I be ever under the leaſt temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble maſter, and the other illuſtrious *Houyhnhnms*, of whom I had ſo long the honour to be an humble hearer.

——*Nec*

——*Nec ſi miſerum Fortuna Sinonem*
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improba
finget.

I know very well, how little reputation is to be got by writings, which require neither genius nor learning, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact *journal*. I know likewiſe, that writers of travels, like *dictionary*-makers, are ſunk into oblivion by the weight and bulk of thoſe, who come laſt, and therefore lie uppermoſt. And it is highly probable, that ſuch travellers, who ſhall hereafter viſit the countries deſcribed in this work of mine, may by detecting my errors (if there be any) and adding many new diſcoveries of their own, juſtle me out of vogue and ſtand in my place, making the world forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification, if I wrote for fame: but as my ſole intention was the *public good*, I cannot be altogether diſappointed. For who can read of the virtues I have mentioned in the glorious *Houyhnhnms* without being aſhamed of his own vices, when he conſiders himſelf as the reaſoning, governing animal of his country? I ſhall ſay nothing of thoſe remote nations, where *yahoos* preſide; amongſt which the leaſt corrupted are the *Brobdingnagians*, whoſe wiſe maxims in morality and govern-

ment it would be our happineſs to obſerve. But I forbear deſcanting farther, and rather leave the judicious reader to his own remarks and applications.

I am not a little pleaſed, that this work of mine can poſſibly meet with no cenſurers: for what objections can be made againſt a writer, who relates only plain facts, that happened in ſuch diſtant countries, where we have not the leaſt intereſt with reſpect either to trade or negotiations? I have carefully avoided every fault, with which common writers of travels are often too juſtly charged. Beſides, I meddle not the leaſt with any *party*, but write without paſſion, prejudice, or ill-will againſt any man, or number of men whatſoever. I write for the nobleſt end, to inform and inſtruct mankind, over whom I may, without breach of modeſty, pretend to ſome ſuperiority from the advantages I received by converſing ſo long among the moſt accompliſhed *Houyhnhnms*. I write without any view towards profit or praiſe. I never ſuffer a word to paſs, that may look like reflection, or poſſibly give the leaſt offence, even to thoſe who are moſt ready to take it. So that I hope, I may with juſtice pronounce myſelf an author perfectly blameleſs; againſt whom the tribes of anſwerers, conſiderers, obſervers, reflecters, detecters, remarkers, will never be able to find matter for exerciſing their talents.

I confeſs,

I confeſs, it was whiſpered to me, that I was bound in duty, as a ſubject of *England*, to have given in a memorial to a ſecretary of ſtate at my firſt coming over; becauſe, whatever lands are diſcovered by a ſubject, belong to the crown. But I doubt whether our conqueſts, in the countries I treat of, would be as eaſy as thoſe of *Ferdinando Cortez* over the naked *Americans*. The *Lilliputians*, I think, are hardly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce them; and I queſtion whether it might be prudent or ſafe to attempt the *Brobdingnagians*. Or whether an *engliſh* army would be much at their eaſe with the flying iſland over their heads. The *Houyhnhnms* indeed appear not to be ſo well prepared for war, a ſcience to which they are perfect ſtrangers, and eſpecially againſt miſſive weapons. However, ſuppoſing myſelf to be a miniſter of ſtate, I could never give my advice for invading them. Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedneſs with fear, and their love of their country, would amply ſupply all defects in the military art. Imagine twenty thouſand of them breaking into the midſt of an *european* army, confounding the ranks, overturning the carriages, battering the warriors faces into mummy by terrible yerks from their hinder hoofs; for they would well deſerve the character given to *Auguſtus: Recalcitrat undique tutus.* But inſtead of propoſals for conquering that magnanimous nation, I rather wiſh they were in a capacity, or diſpoſition,

to ſend a ſufficient number of their inhabitants for civilizing *Europe*, by teaching us the firſt principles of honour, juſtice, truth, temperance, public ſpirit, fortitude, chaſtity, friendſhip, benevolence, and fidelity. The *names* of all which virtues are ſtill retained among us in moſt languages, and are to be met with in modern, as well as ancient authors; which I am able to aſſert from my own ſmall reading.

But I had another reaſon, which made me leſs forward to enlarge his majeſty's dominions by my diſcoveries. To ſay the truth, I had conceived a few ſcruples with relation to the diſtributive juſtice of princes upon thoſe occaſions. For inſtance, a crew of pyrates are driven by a ſtorm they know not whither; at length a boy diſcovers land from the topmaſt; they go on ſhore to rob and plunder; they ſee an harmleſs people, are entertained with kindneſs; they give the country a new name; they take formal poſſeſſion of it for their king; they ſet up a rotten plank or a ſtone for a memorial; they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more by force for a ſample, return home, and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion acquired with a title by *divine right*. Ships are ſent with the firſt opportunity; the natives driven out or deſtroyed; their princes tortured to diſcover their gold; a free licence given to all acts of inhumanity and luſt, the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabi-

inhabitants: and this execrable crew of butchers employed in ſo pious an expedition, is a *modern colony*, ſent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people.

But this deſcription, I confeſs, doth by no means affect the *Britiſh* nation, who may be an example to the whole world for their wiſdom, care, and juſtice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able paſtors to propagate *chriſtianity*; their caution in ſtocking their provinces with people of ſober lives and converſations from this the mother kingdom; their ſtrict regard to the diſtribution of juſtice, in ſupplying the civil adminiſtration through all their colonies with officers of the greateſt abilities, utter ſtrangers to corruption; and to crown all, by ſending the moſt vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other views than the happineſs of the people over whom they preſide, and the honour of the king their maſter.

But as thoſe countries, which I have deſcribed, do not appear to have any deſire of being conquered, and enſlaved, murdered or driven out by colonies; nor abound either in gold, ſilver, ſugar, or tobacco; I did humbly conceive, they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our intereſt. However, if thoſe, whom it more concerns, think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depoſe, when I ſhall be lawfully called, that no *European* did ever viſit theſe countries before

before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed, unleſs a diſpute may ariſe concerning the two *yahoos* ſaid to have been ſeen many ages ago upon a mountain in *Houyhnhnmland*.

But, as to the formality of taking poſſeſſion in my ſovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps in point of prudence and ſelf-preſervation have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the only objection, that can ever be raiſed againſt me as a traveller; I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own ſpeculations in my little garden at *Redriff*; to apply thoſe excellent leſſons of virtue, which I learned among the *Houyhnhnms*; to inſtruct the *yahoos* of my own family, as far as I ſhall find them docible animals; to behold my figure often in a glaſs, and thus, if poſſible, habituate myſelf by time to tolerate the ſight of a human creature: to lament the brutality of *Houyhnhnms* in my own country, but always treat their perſons with reſpect for the ſake of my noble maſter, his family, his friends, and the whole *Houyhnhnm* race, whom theſe of ours have the honour to reſemble in all their lineaments, however their intellectuals came to degenerate.

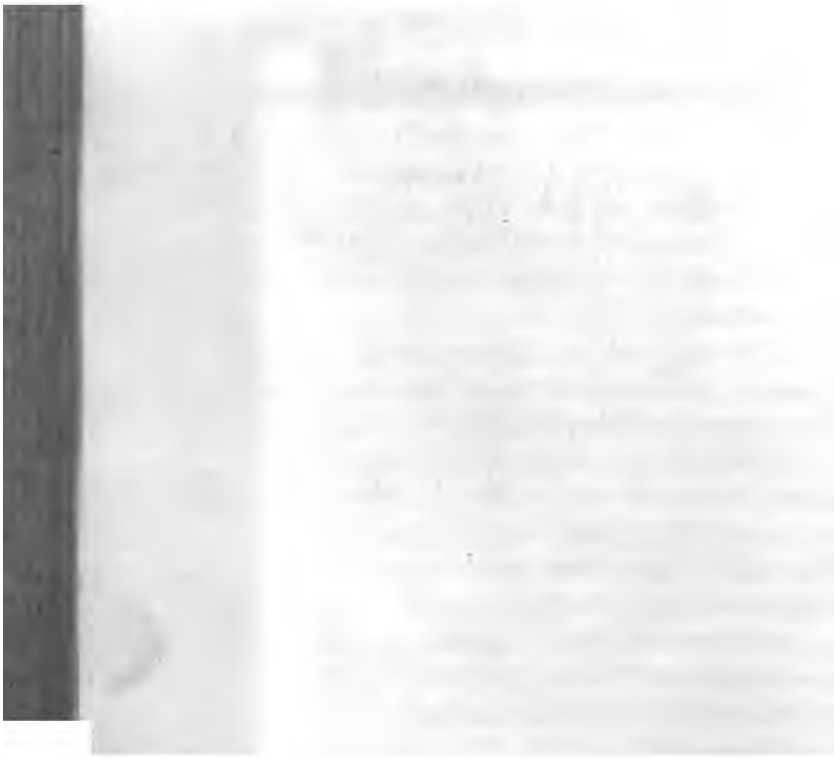
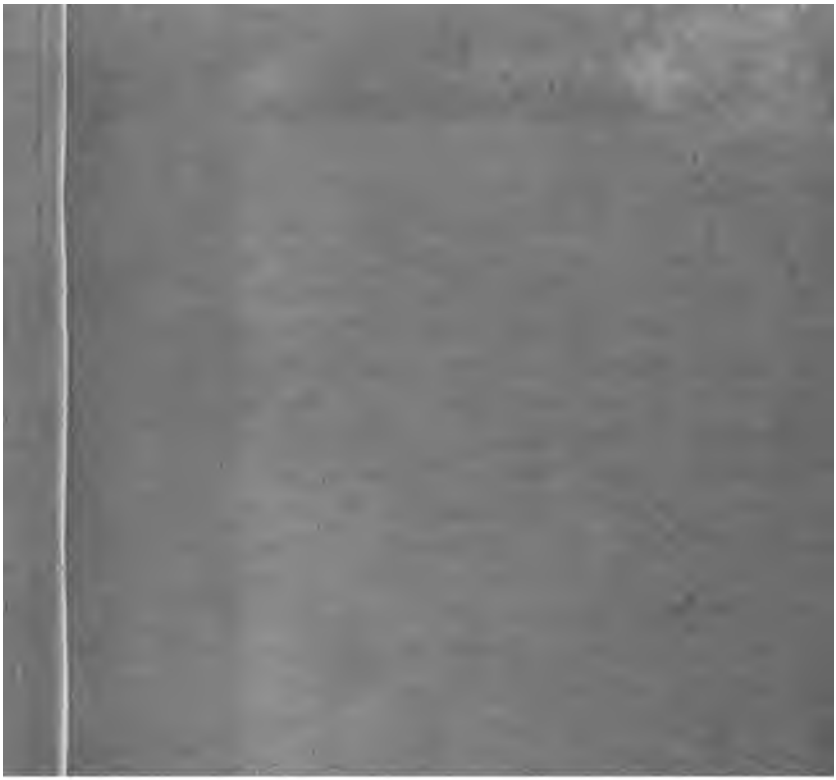
I began laſt week to permit my wife to ſit at dinner with me at the fartheſt end of a long table; and to anſwer (but

with the utmoſt brevity) the few queſtions I aſked her. Yet, the ſmell of a *yahoo* continuing very offenſive, I always keep my noſe well ſtopped with rue, lavender, or tobacco-leaves. And, although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes in ſome time to ſuffer a neighbour *yahoo* in my company, without the apprehenſions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

My reconcilement to the *yahoo* kind in general might not be ſo difficult, if they would be content with thoſe vices and follies only, which nature hath intitled them to. I am not in the leaſt provoked at the ſight of a lawyer, a pickpocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gameſter, a politician, a whore-monger, a phyſician, an evidence, a ſuborner, an attorney, a traitor, or the like: this is all according to the due courſe of things: but when I behold a lump of deformity and diſeaſes both in body and mind ſmitten with *pride*, it immediately breaks all the meaſures of my patience; neither ſhall I be ever able to comprehend how ſuch an animal, and ſuch a vice, could tally together. The wiſe and virtuous *Houyhnhnms*, who abound in all excellencies that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which hath no terms to expreſs any thing that is evil, except thoſe whereby they deſcribe the deteſtable qualities of their *yahoos*, among which they were not able to diſtinguiſh this of pride for want of thoroughly

ly underſtanding human nature, as it ſheweth itſelf in other countries, where that animal preſides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly obſerve ſome rudiments of it among the wild *yahoos*.

But the *Houyhnhnms*, who live under the government of reaſon, are no more proud of the good qualities they poſſeſs, than I ſhould be for not wanting a leg or an arm, which no man in his wits would boaſt of, although he muſt be miſerable without them. I dwell the longer upon this ſubject, from the deſire I have to make the ſociety of an *engliſh yahoo* by any means not inſupportable; and therefore I here entreat thoſe, who have any tincture of this abſurd vice, that they will not preſume to come in my ſight.

' To mortify pride, which indeed was not made for man, and produces not only the moſt ridiculous follies, but the moſt extenſive calamity, appears to have been one general view of the author in every part of theſe travels. Perſonal ſtrength and beauty, the wiſdom and the virtue of mankind, become objects not of pride but of humility, in the diminutive ſtature and contemptible weakneſs of the *Lilliputians*; in the horrid deformity of the *Brobdingnagians*; in the learned folly of the *Laputians*, and in the parallel drawn between our manners and thoſe of the *Houyhnhnms*.

F I N I S.